

One Birth Two Treasures: The Billionaire's Sweet Love

Chapter 420 – The Humiliation of the Godlike Youyou
– Read novel online for free

Chapter 420: The Humiliation of the Godlike Youyou

The child was anxious for them to follow suit as Youyou and his mother disappeared in the crowd. She wanted to join in on the fun, but her mother became occupied with her phone. It was no wonder she was suddenly impatient!

Jiang Li temporarily set her phone aside, picked up her daughter, and hurried over to where the two had disappeared.

In this stretch, which was called Happiness Street, many arcade games could be seen. The mother-son pair was found standing before an arcade hoop.

The machine had a long queue to it. The people were willing to line up not because the simple game was fun but because the prizes were quite attractive.

There were the Muppets, cute bolsters, and various popular toys from Lezhi Holdings; even a limited-edition robot of the same brand was on display as a prize.

Youyou was eyeing one of the prizes; it was a set of cute lovely plushies that looked very similar to the ones given by his mother when he was younger!

He was not particularly fond of toys, but he had a soft spot for cute plushies, which could be attributed to his childlike instinct.

(vit(function()){)

When he was much younger, on a similar occasion like Children's Day, his mother had given him a set of lovely teddy bear plushies. They were just the right size for him to hug when he slept.

The boy treasured the pair very much. They were placed at the headboard when not in use; no one was allowed to touch them.

Maybe, because the two teddy bears were gifts from his mother, he cherished them a lot and even sewed little costumes for them. It might look childish now, but they were part of his childhood.

The little lad loved going to bed at night with these two bears on his flanks. As he hugged the soft fluffy toys into his dreamland, his dreams seemed to become sweeter.

At a much later time, however, this pair of plushies was taken by Yun Na's cousin without his consent. When he discovered that his soft toys were missing upon his return, he anxiously checked and inquired everywhere for them. In the end, his adoptive aunt frivolously threw the truth to his face.

“My cousin swung by today and saw the teddy bears. She likes both a lot, so I gave them to her.”

He was depressed over this for a long time.

When Yun Shishi learned that the floppy toys had been given away by Yun Na and saw how listless her son had become every night

from then on, she searched high and low for replacements. Unfortunately, she could not find any similar-looking plushies anymore.

“Mommy, I want the two teddy bears over there!”

Their prize would require 500 points to redeem. Each ball that went through the hoop would count as 15 points; that would mean that at least 30 balls needed to go through the hoop in a matter of minute for a chance to get the plushies. This was a challenge to many people.

Yun Shishi could recognize these soft toys with one look. They were almost identical to the set of teddy bear plushies she had given him before!

This little fellow... still remembered the two plushies from the past?

She reckoned that most children were forgetful, but he apparently was not the same.

Yun Tianyou exchanged his VIP ticket for a chance to play the game. As it was a VIP ticket, he had top priority. Standing in front of the kid-size arcade hoop, he had to seek his bull strength to throw the ball out.

Pong—

The ball hit the hoop but missed the mark.

Perspiring beads of cold sweat, he looked unconvinced and tried again with the next one.

This time around, the angle and power were suitably appropriate, and the ball went through the hoop.

His mother shouted encouragingly, “Excellent, Youyou! Keep it up!”

He was concentrating on aiming the ball and could not reply to her. One minute flew by and he was panting from his exertion. Unfortunately, he only managed to earn himself 300 points, which were half of the required points.

Chapter 421: Give it all for Youyou!

One minute flew by and he was panting from his exertion. Unfortunately, he only managed to earn himself 300 points, which were half of the required points.

The boy pouted unhappily.

His physique was unable to keep up with the demanding challenge.

It did not take long for him to be out of breath, and his face was flushed from his effort. He was evidently drained.

“Little brother, here’s a wet towel for you to use!” Qianqian, who was standing at one side, shyly passed a wet towel to him.

Eyeing her, he forced his lips to form a smile. “Thank you.” He then took the towel from her hand.

That gentle smile of this godlike man-child was so beautiful it made her swoon from head to toe. Everything around them even seemed to pale in comparison to his smile, and she became his faithful worshipper from then on.

(vit(function()){()

“N-No... No need to th-thank me!” Her heart raced fast as her small face blushed like a ripe persimmon.

Her mother took this chance to capture a shot of her lovelorn moment and sent it to the chat group. The caption went: ‘My daughter and her little godlike man look compatible together. He he!’

The class group chat exploded with excitement. When Jiang Li opened her WeChat again, her message box nearly burst from the heavy traffic of messages.

“Jiang Li, can you ask Shishi if she can come to our class gathering next month?”

“Jiang Li?!”

“Where is she?”

“????”

“Jiang Li, you are tasked with convincing Shishi to attend our annual class gathering next month!”

“...”

The woman hesitated. “She may not be free.”

“We don’t care; this tall task shall now be left into your hands!”

She raised her head with doubt of whether she could accomplish such a daunting task. Yun Shishi was before an adult-size arcade hoop, ready to take a shot at the prize. She had also handed her VIP ticket for a chance at this game. Her fighting spirit was riding high as she took a good look at the gifts lining the display cabinet.

Pong—

Pong—

Pong—

All three shots went through.

The onlookers let out waves of exclamations and cheers.

Initially, they were attracted to her sheer beauty. This young lady was with a precious kid. Even when she was in a simple attire, she was ravishing like a star.

When it came to basketball, though, she was no lesser than a man!

She seemed incapable of taking a hit with her thin arms and tapered waist. After all, shooting a ball was a taxing physical activity, so no one expected all her shots to get into the net!

What they were not privy of was that she used to be in the school girls’ basketball team back in junior high. Hence, games like ‘shoot the hoop’ was not that difficult for her.

While her shooting skill was pretty good, doing such an activity for a minute was hard. Her arms gradually grew tired as the ball started to weigh like lead.

Shooting until the end, she managed to earn 490 points, which were still short of 5 points.

Her expression dimmed at this juncture.

Yun Tianyou's heart ached in sympathy for her effort. Frowning with heartache, he quickly passed her a bottle of mineral water. "Mommy, drink some water and take a rest!"

"Eh! I'll try again later!" She would not admit defeat. Taking the bottle of mineral water from his hand, she downed the drink as she resolved to fight harder at the next opportunity.

"Mommy, let's forget it. I don't want the plushies anymore."

He felt his heart burn at the sight of her covered in perspiration.

Chapter 422: Mommy, Youyou Loves You!

"Mommy, forget about it. I don't want the plushies anymore."

He felt his heart burn at the sight of her covered in perspiration.

He no longer wanted the toys!

Seeing his mommy fight so hard for him, he could not bear for her to continue. He came to her side to massage her joints and arms with his small hands in hopes of quickly alleviating her soreness.

“Since Youyou likes the plushies, mommy will surely win it for you.”

She vowed to do that for him with a resolute look. Once she had a gulp of water, she asked for another chance at the game with her VIP ticket.

Youyou stood at the side with his face flushed and lips thinly pursed. While his mother’s insistence made his heart ache, it also caused warmth to spread in every pore of his being.

(vit(function())())

Yun Shishi was never one to give up. In her eyes, there was only trying harder and trying even harder; nothing was ever truly out of reach.

Similarly, regarding her studies, while she could not be deemed as the brightest crayon in the box, in terms of hard work and diligence, she had a resolution absent within many others.

To top it off, she was the epitome of stubbornness.

Thus, the staff members in the area were utterly flabbergasted. They had seen many visitors play the game to win the prizes, yet they had never met anyone as dogged as her about winning them; she repeatedly played the same boring game for a prize. Having an

unusual level of determination, she was simply not wired to give up easily.

Their shock did not just stem from that. Except for a few special prizes that were not on the market, the item rewards on display were not very expensive.

Compared to a VIP ticket, which was priced at a few thousand yuan, the value of the toys was not that high.

She spent that money to purchase a VIP ticket yet showed obsession with an affordable product and a dull game...

It was truly unfathomable!

She could not care less for their thoughts, though. She only knew that the pair of plushies was something Youyou liked and wanted – this was enough reason for her to get it!

If she could not clear the game, she would proceed with another round.

It was not until the third round that Yun Shishi barely surpassed the 500-point mark like she wished and got the prize for Youyou.

“Darling, look; mommy won!” She bent down before him and lightly stroked the bridge of his nose.

Youyou was absolutely moved. He gently caressed the teddy bears and glanced up at his mother, who was smiling brightly at him despite being drenched in sweet-smelling sweat. There was suddenly a lump in his throat.

“Mommy, Youyou loves you!”

In return for her effort, he closed in on her and presented her with a kiss. It was considered as the sweetest reward!

Yun Shishi grinned from ear to ear. Qianqian, who was beside him, coveted the teddy bears. Meekly and hesitantly, she asked, “Big brother, can I touch your teddy bears?”

“Here.”

Youyou was still rather benevolent. Qianqian, this little imp, other than being extremely clingy, was not an annoyance. Thus, he let her play with the plushies for a bit.

Qianqian clearly loved the pair of plushies so much she could hardly put it down; the teddy bears were adorable. For children her age, stuffed toys like such were irresistible, so after playing with the plushies for a moment, she grumbled about wanting one, too.

Hence, Jiang Li went for a round of game, but she did not even earn a hundred points.

This was a little awkward!

Jiang Li then walked to where Qianqian was and urged her to return the stuffed toys to Youyou.

She tried her best to persuade her daughter, yet the latter just gripped the toys more tightly. Qianqian’s eyes misted over as she pouted her small lips. Looking bitter and indignant, she was apparently about to bawl her eyes out!

Aware that she had no intention of letting go, Jiang Li felt somewhat embarrassed. The pair of teddy bears was his, after all, so her daughter could not take it from him just like that.

However, her daughter was still so young; how would she know of these principles? Before Jiang Li could speak again, Qianqian's tears trickled down her cheeks and pitter-pattered on the ground.

Chapter 423: Defending Youyou

However, her daughter was still so young; how would she know of these principles? Before Jiang Li could speak again, Qianqian's tears trickled down her cheeks and pitter-pattered on the ground.

“Wuu... Qianqian likes teddies, too... wuu... Don't take away Qianqian's teddies...”

As soon as she said that, Jiang Li laughed awkwardly and then berated, “Qianqian, knock it off. Give the teddies back to Youyou!”

“No! Qianqian likes teddies a lot... Teddies also like Qianqian...”

Jiang Li's smile entirely froze on her face. She looked up to Yun Shishi in shame. Unable to come up with a way to pacify her child, she could only look imploringly at her.

She had pampered Qianqian ever since she was a baby; thus, it could not be helped that she was a little willful at times.

Being a girl, she was loved and spoiled. Jiang Li knew that if she were to take the toys from Qianqian's grasp, the latter would surely weep her eyes out!

(vit(function()){)

Her crying skill was not to be underestimated. As soon as her small lips came apart, her ear-splitting wail would surely ring about. She could not afford for that to happen.

Many people were in the area. If her daughter proceeded to act perverse by lying on the floor as she wailed, she would be in a lot of trouble.

Thus, thinking it through, even if she must buy the toys from Yun Shishi, she would willingly do so. She could only hope that the latter would let her daughter have the plushies.

Yun Shishi was no fool. Perceiving her intention, she also felt a little awkward.

Perhaps, according to what society dictated, she should readily concede the stuffed toys to another's child as it would, at most, sadden her own child only a little. Ultimately, she should preserve her face in public!

If the little girl insisted on taking ownership of the teddies and she were to disagree, the situation would worsen for them two. She might even be secretly gossiped about by others because of this; they would say that she was petty and that she, as an adult, had stooped to the level of a child!

After all, bickering with a child was a no-no, right ?

She did not think so.

She believed that, while adults might not consider toys as valuable, in the eyes of children, they were of much importance – toys were personal items to them. As an adult, one should give the child due respect, even if it were for a small toy.

Moreover, she obtained the plushies with great effort. They must be very precious to Youyou.

If she were to simply give them to another child, he would undoubtedly be hurt.

The child might think that he was not being respected as his precious toys could easily be given to another.

Therefore, she walked toward the little girl and bent down before her. She calmed her down first before she gently spoke, “Qianqian, aunt knows that you like the teddies very much, but do you know who truly own them ?”

“It’s aunt!”

“No, it’s Youyou.” She pulled him to her side as she continued, “The toys belong to Youyou, and even if aunt wants to give them to you, because you’re so cute, they are Youyou’s precious properties. Qianqian, do you have a toy that you really like at home ?”

“Yes. I like many toys at home.” Qianqian held back her tears as she whimpered her reply.

“If your mommy gives them away to another child without asking you, will Qianqian not get angry?”

“I will get angry! Very angry!” The little one exclaimed indignantly.

“Is Qianqian willing to give the toys back to Youyou, then?”

Chapter 424: Forsaking the Plushies for Mommy

“Is Qianqian willing to give the toys back to Youyou, then?”

Yun Shishi gently led her on. When she saw that the little girl was wavering while looking dismayed, she added, “Wait for aunt. I’ll go win a pair for you, too. All right?”

As soon as Youyou heard that, his blood ran cold as his face paled.

At the thought of his mother going through the trouble of playing the game again just to satisfy the imp, his heart throbbed with a dull pain.

Therefore, when Qianqian reluctantly returned the toys to Youyou, he gritted his teeth and pushed them back to her, pretending to be magnanimous. “I don’t want them anymore! I’m giving you these toys!”

Qianqian’s eyes nearly popped out from shock. Jiang Li was astonished by Youyou’s maturity and generosity and prompted her daughter right away. “Qianqian, quickly thank Youyou!”

“Thank you, big brother! Thank you, big brother! Qianqian loves big brother the most!”

(vit(function())())

He turned away pridefully.

He did not like her at all!

Yun Shishi gently stroked his head as her heart ached at him needing to be generous and mature. “Youyou is so sweet and knows to let go for a younger sister!”

“I can’t stoop to the same level as a kid.” Youyou helplessly shrugged before he spouted these words where Jiang Li could not hear them.

Yun Shishi did not know whether to laugh or cry.

Did he forget that he was also a child when he said that?

Actually, his willingness to give away the toys to the little girl surprised her. She then thought of gifting him with another toy.

Hence, she halted her steps when her eyes caught sight of a toy panda, about 1.5 meters tall, on another stall’s display shelf.

“Youyou, do you like that one?”

“I do, but... ”

“Alright! Wait a bit for mommy!”

She stepped forward to play the game after saying that.

To win the prize, one had to pop 20 balloons in 60 seconds using the toy gun provided.

20!

Yun Shishi's eyes lit up with determination. She had 60 seconds to burst 20 balloons. This was not too difficult of a task.

She showed prowess in shooting back when she was undergoing military training in university. Hence, she had some confidence in winning the prize.

However, the moment she lifted the toy gun, the confidence she had was entirely dispelled.

It was unusually heavy.

It had the same weight and size as that gun she had used for target practice during the military training, but she did not feel comfortable holding this replica as it seemed to be of poor quality.

She weighed it in her hands and managed to get used to it, albeit with some difficulty.

The staff came over and was about to inquire when she flashed him her VIP ticket. He got the message upon seeing the ticket and told her the rules of the game.

She lost some of her spirit when he explained the rules.

It turned out that skill alone would not do to succeed in the game; one required a stroke of luck as well.

Not only must one pop the balloons, a point token would fall for every successful attempt, one also had to burst 20 balloons in 60 seconds and accumulate a total of 200 points!

It was quite challenging!

No pain, no gain, indeed.

However, even though it was challenging, since she was already here, why should she not enjoy the game?!

The game, thus, began.

The shot she fired did hit the target accurately, but the balloon did not pop!

Still, generally speaking, the smaller the balloon was, the more resilient it was at being punctured. The bullets from the toy gun did not have a powerful impact. If the shot was fired at an inaccurate angle, even if it did hit the balloon, the balloon would not pop.

The balloons were simply springy enough to bounce the bullets off.

Five shots were consecutively fired off, yet all did not puncture even one balloon.

She was undoubtedly stumped by this challenge.

Chapter 425: Win the Soft Toy for My Brother

She was undoubtedly stumped by this challenge.

Time flew by, and pretty soon, she had to put down the toy gun in defeat.

She only managed to puncture eight balloons in 60 seconds. Still, with a bit of luck, the tokens she got from the balloons were of high value. Thus, even though she only popped eight balloons, her total score reached 150 points.

Yun Tianyou went up to help his mother with the toy gun, and its heavy weight nearly made him stumble. He quickly returned the toy gun to its original position.

It is so heavy!

She had to give up. “The game is too difficult.”

“It’s all right, mommy!” Youyou showed her a smile devoid of discontent. “Let’s go somewhere else to play!”

(vit(function()){)

She nodded in easy acquiescence. Carrying him in her arms, they left the location with Jiang Li and her daughter.

Just as she turned around and took her first step away from the area, an inquisitive head poked from behind a nearby lamp post.

Little Yichen, with his backpack, detached himself from the shadows and watched the four leave with their backs on him. He did not try to catch up to them this time.

He raised his smart watch, opened the GPS locator, and locked on the position of his target, Yun Tianyou, before he walked to the shooting

game counter. Pursing his lips, he presented his VIP ticket to the worker before him.

Earlier, as he was closely observing Yun Tianyou and his mother from behind the lamp post, he caught sight of the watch on the boy's wrist.

It was identical to his. This was when he realized that the target he had been pursuing this whole time was him!

Isn't he the boy I saw at the gala before?

Is he my brother?

He must be my brother!

With a face the exact copy of his, there would be no other explanation!

It was the same face that had appeared in his dreams many times before, so he had a sense of familiarity to it.

He neither understood telepathy nor knew of their relationship, but subconsciously, he perceived a strong connection to that child who should be his brother!

He had a brother, after all; it was not just a dream!

While he was shocked to find out the truth, he was not eager to expose himself, either. Instead, he opted following them around in secret.

He saw how Yun Shishi, in order to win the plushies for Yun Tianyou, had played that boring basketball game for four or five times.

He saw how she had staunchly defended her child's feelings when another child tried to snatch the plushies from Yun Tianyou instead of blindly protecting the other child.

He saw how pained and moved she was when his brother chose to give up the toys.

Finally, he saw how she had tried her hands at that tedious shooting game just for a chance to win him a toy again.

He saw everything, and he was very envious!

Her actions were especially poignant after his father had dumped him in the theme park because of another child. The tender loving interaction between the mother and son he had witnessed only accentuated his loneliness and dejection.

Not only did he feel sad, he also craved for that single-minded attention and love!

He wished to have a mommy who would protect, love, and care for him just like her!

He was truly envious of Yun Tianyou for having a mother who would stand by him no matter when, where, and what it was rather than siding with another kid!

As such, when he saw her fail to reach her goal with the shooting game, he silently made up his mind about his next action.

“Little boy, do you want to play, too?” An employee walked toward him curiously. Seeing that he was alone, the woman looked around worriedly for his parent.

“Yes, I want to play. Give me the gun.” Little Yichen gave this short but firm reply.

Chapter 426: Little Yichen’s Amazing Talent

“Yes, I want to play. Give me the gun.” Little Yichen gave this short but firm reply.

The employee was in a fix because of his request! “But... the gun is heavy!”

“I know.” He started to get impatient. “I can carry it!”

“...” The worker was not convinced.

Oh, please. How old is this kid? He looks to be about six years old, and he barely passes the game counter’s height.

This toy gun, which was a replica of a real one, was unusually heavy at 10 kilograms!

The boy’s patience was quickly running thin at her hesitation.

“Please give me the gun.”

(vit(function())())

“I’ll let you give it a try!” Thinking that he was out to create trouble, the worker started grumbling about the kid’s parents inwardly, This theme park is so big; how can they just let the child roam by himself? What if the child loses his way?

Fortunately, the worker, who was quite taken with the adorable lad, decided to let him test the weight of the toy gun.

Before she could open her mouth, he neatly took hold of the gun and carried it effortlessly in his arms. With his hand slightly caressing the gun’s body, he calmly said, “You can start counting now.”

Hearing his words and seeing him easily hold the gun replica in his hands, the staff could not help but fumble in shock. She was unable to keep her cool anymore...

While this gun was just a toy, leaving it in the hands of a six-year-old was too risky!

They would be held accountable for any fiasco that might stem from this. They could simply not afford to face any loss!

More importantly, she realized that this boy was from a wealthy family the moment he presented his VIP ticket to her.

It would be a joke if an average folk could afford a ticket that cost several thousand yuan.

Children with such a background needed special supervision. After all, if something were to go wrong, what answer would they give to the child’s parents?!

“Where are your parents?”

He could take it no more. “Start the timer!”

The worker looked dully at him and then pressed the start button of the timer.

Little Yichen adjusted himself to the most comfortable and pulled the trigger. A projectile quickly traveled through the barrel’s passage and heavily punched the air. However, the bullet’s speed was still a tad slow, so when it hit a balloon, it bounced off it, instead.

“!” He frowned unhappily. This toy gun would not let him display his actual prowess with its limited capability!

He fired a few more shots for a test run. Except for a few alterations and some intentional debugging, this toy gun looked and felt like the real thing. He was able to determine its issue after this test; the trajectory of the ballistics had been changed. He deftly dismantled the gun to check, and just as he had suspected, it was indeed an issue with the ballistics’ path.

Guns and ammunition were truly his forte.

He easily resolved this thorny issue and reassembled the gun. By then, half of the allocated time had lapsed.

Although the little chap did not blow any balloons, his professional gun-handling and his absorbing presence when he was shooting drew much attention and amazement from a handful employees nearby.

Oh, he definitely can do it! Has this little fellow undergone training before?

He's so young; did his family train him to shoot?

He would not have such skills and confidence without professional training.

However, when they saw how the little lad had pulled apart and then put back together the gun, no words could express their shock.

Chapter 427: The toy is snatched!

However, when they saw how the little lad had pulled apart and then put back together the gun, no words could express their shock.

It was too shocking!

This little kid... Why was he so good?!

It was enough for him to know how to operate a toy gun, but he was even better than that. How did he know that the trajectory of the ballistics had been modified and, more importantly, how to revert it to its original state?

If they did not witness this scene personally, they would not really believe it to be possible.

The boy knew that time was running out, so without further delay, he loaded the gun and pulled the trigger. This time, the bullet no longer tarried but easily punctured the balloon, sending out tiny sparks of carbide in the process.

SMACK!

(vit(function())())

In an instant and without any signs of erratic flight, the balloon burst apart into sparks of fire.

While everyone was still trying to recover from their awe, Little Yichen had already expertly repeated the cycle of reloading the gun, taking aim, and pulling the trigger several times.

Before long, his astounding feat attracted the attention of many bystanders. When they saw that a mere six-year-old was playing the shooting game with ease, they hustled about to have a better look.

SMACK!

SMACK!

SMACK!

With each punctured balloon, token dropped to the floor with a clatter. The 30th balloon's token fell nicely to the ground just as the last second ticked on the timer.

He put down the gun at the same time the worker stopped the timer. By now, she had become speechless from watching his amazing performance.

Awe and wonder rippled through the crowd.

Oh, my god... This child is really exceptional!

“Tally the points for me. Thank you.” The boy was expressionless when he issued this request to the lady at the counter.

This staff, who was still reeling in amazement, only set to do the task at the little lad's icy stare. She quickly collated all the tokens on the floor and counted them.

Luck was apparently not on his side today as all his tokens were small in value. The good thing was that he had gathered so many tokens they were collectively worth more than 300 points!

He cocked a brow to acknowledge the score; he was devoid of the excitement that any typical children would portray if they were in his shoes.

He appeared to have already predicted this result from the start!

“Little boy, congratulations. You have earned yourself 320 points! What prize do you want?”

He looked at the display shelf and pointed at the huge panda plushy with tenderness in his eyes.

“Are you pointing at the panda bear plushy over there?”

“Eh! That's the one.” He waited for her to pass him the toy.

The woman nodded and walked over to the display shelf to hurl the toy over to him.

“Oh, no. Zhang, wait a minute! How many panda bear plushies do we have in stock?” Another worker from the same game stall hurried over with an anxious look.

“This is the only one. Why?”

“Is there really no other stock available?”

“Yup. This is the last one. What’s the matter?”

“Oh, no. What do we do?! Another visitor, who has just finished his game, wants this prize... What an unfortunate coincidence! Did your customer complete the game?”

“Eh!” Zhang nodded as she recalled the little lad’s impeccable skills earlier. She had yet to regain her composure even to this point!

“What to do now? The customer over there only has eyes for this prize!”

“... But my customer also wants this!”

“Which one? Let me have a look.”

“That child over there; did you see him?”

He looked in the direction Zhang was pointing, and when he saw that the one competing for the same prize was just a six-year-old boy, his expression darkened. “Are you kidding me? That boy is only six. No child below the age of 10 has the competency to play this game with stringent rules! Even the gun is too heavy for him to use properly!”

Chapter 428: Getting His Younger Brother’s Toy Back 1

He looked in the direction Zhang was pointing, and when he saw that the one competing for the same prize was just a six-year-old boy, his expression darkened. “Are you kidding me? That boy is only six. No

child below the age of 10 has the competency to play this game with stringent rules! Even the gun is too heavy for him to use properly!”

He could not help but doubt her. “You didn’t make it easier for him just because he looks delicate and adorable, right?”

“Nonsense. How would I? He is indeed young, but I assure you that he’s very capable. That child did not cheat. He did pop 30 balloons in 60 seconds for a total of 320 points.”

“Impossible!” His face looked askance. “This customer of mine is a military academy graduate. He is extremely skilled at shooting, yet he only popped 20 balloons for a total of 300 points!”

“... I’m not lying.”

How could he believe that? Shaking his head, he conferred, “Hey. This customer is hard to deal with. He especially brought his girlfriend here, and since she laid eyes on this toy panda, it’s obvious that he would want to make her happy by getting it. He only cleared the game after playing for a few times. It’s just a kid over on your end; he’s definitely easier to deal with! Why not persuade him into picking another prize?”

...

(vit(function()){)

Yichen waited on one spot for a while, but when he caught sight of the staff bringing the toy panda over to another area, he reacted in agitation as he hurried over to stop the man.

“That panda is my prize; where are you taking it?”

He laughed awkwardly. “Kid, this big brother also completed the game. Just choose another prize, okay?”

“NO!” Yichen replied firmly. “This toy is my present to my younger brother. I won it fair and square, so it is rightfully mine. Isn’t that stated in your rules?”

He was rendered speechless.

“Kid, move aside. This is no place for you to speak!” A young man came up to him. He was not endowed with an outstanding appearance, yet his eyes held a supercilious look. Moving to stand before him, he flashed him a disdainful gaze before he shooed him away.

“Am I talking to you?” Yichen’s brows knitted in indifference.

“Kid, you’re a daredevil, aren’t you?”

The young man was obviously agitated by Yichen’s disregard. “I won this prize from the game. What has this got to do with you?”

Yichen calmly replied, “This has got everything to do with me. I won the game too.”

“Ha ha! Kid, you’re pulling my leg, aren’t you?” He guffawed. He seemed to have heard an outrageous joke. Eventually, he sternly spoke, “Just you? A boy who has just weaned off baby milk? You know how to use a gun? Don’t kid yourself, boy!”

“What a short-sighted person – just like a frog in a well.” Yichen used this idiom he had recently learned to criticize the man.

The young man's mouth visibly twitched in the corners upon hearing that statement. If he were not in front of so many people, he would not repress from smacking the little boy on the forehead!

The female staff spoke weakly, "This child did clear the game! He truly did..."

He threw her a glare. "You think I'm easily deceived, right? Who is this kid to you? Why do you want to shield him? I'm a customer here. Since I've cleared the game, I have the right to the prize, haven't I?"

"I'm not shielding this little boy!"

Chapter 429: Have You Weaned Off Baby Milk, Kid?

"I'm not shielding this little boy!"

Yichen did not wait for her to finish as he thought that it was pointless. Having no interest in arguing over who had popped more balloons or accumulated more points with the point tokens, he said without a smile, "Enough with the nonsense. Let's have a match. If you win me, this belongs to you. If you lose, I'm taking this away."

His words were clear-cut. He challenged him directly as he intended to resolve this with a competition.

The young man met his cold eyes and, noting his palpably aloof aura, inexplicably felt a little intimidated.

Yichen perceived the man's hesitation. He clearly blurted that out in the spur of the moment, but if the man were to compete with him in skills, it was evident that the man could not be confident in besting him.

In fact, the man did not feel guilty – he simply did not want to compete with a kid.

He would lose face regardless of his victory or loss.

(vit(function()())

Even if he triumphed, it would be an ugly win.

His girlfriend was unfortunately peeved at him. She would only forgive him if he could get her the toy panda. Right now, she was sulking on a bench. To earn her forgiveness, he strove to win the game and finally cleared it with difficulty!

Whatever the thought running in his mind might be, Yichen had not a shred of respect for him. “What? Scared? I'm taking away this prize, then.”

“Hold on! Who said I'm scared? I just think it'll be laughable if I take competing with a child seriously. Anyway, have you even weaned off baby milk, kid?”

The man persisted in taunting him.

“If you're afraid of losing, then don't take it seriously. Wouldn't you be disgraced if you were to lose to me, then?” Yichen sneered provocatively.

The crowd in their surroundings guffawed.

The young man sputtered in his anger and clenched his fists tightly as he bitterly spat, “Let’s have a competition then! I happen to have time today. Let me play with you!”

Yichen nodded. “I like that you’re being straightforward!”

A statement from him had the man turning livid with rage.

Yichen did not bother attending to him. Making his way over to the staff, he flashed his VIP ticket and said, “Let me compete with that guy. The winner will take this toy panda away.”

The staff was quite distressed. This game station was not a platform for a competition, after all; two people competing together here was unheard of. Furthermore, many customers were clamoring to play the games. What if this caused dissatisfaction in others?

Contrary to expectation, once these customers that were queuing for a turn in playing the game caught wind of the child challenging a man into a shooting showdown, they started forming a crowd around the two; they were indubitably wanting to see a good show.

People loved watching drama, after all!

Moreover, this was not just another competition; it was a competition between an adult and a six-year-old child – a very cute one at that!

People were clicking their tongues in amazement!

They were rather intrigued about whether the child was capable or not. Was he simply babbling about or was he truly talented?

Therefore, one after another, they showed curiosity. They wanted to know who could, in the end, clinch victory!

The man, thus, found it a little difficult to back down. With everyone looking on and cheering, even if he regretted his decision at this moment, there was no turning back anymore.

On second thought, how talented would a six-year-old be at shooting?

He had undergone intensive military training in the camp!

No matter how skillful a six-year-old might be, he was still incomparable to his level of skill!

Besides, he was not the one who had proposed this match!

At the thought of this, he let go of his worries and stood in front of the shooting range. He rubbed his hands together; he was itching to begin the competition!

Chapter 430: Overwhelming Showdown!

Translator: Atlas Studios Editor: Atlas Studios

At the thought of this, he let go of his worries and stood in front of the shooting range. He rubbed his hands together; he was itching to begin the competition!

This time, Yichen had the foresight.

He did not know earlier that the barrel's path had been modified, so he wasted an entire half of his game time.

Now, he was able to make the necessary adjustment to that and reassemble the gun before the game even began.

In this competition, there was no room for mistake. He must win that toy panda!

From the side, the man chuckled to himself as he watched him disassemble and put the gun back together.

This kid was probably a black sheep!

(vit(function())())

What would a mere six-year-old know of guns? Could he be savvier about it than him?!

He took it apart and then rebuilt it. Who knew? Maybe, this kid would accidentally lose parts of the gun, and when the game began, his gun would be unusable... He could not be blamed for being heartless then!

“Are you both ready?”

The staff held a timer up. Once she saw that the two were covetously aiming straight at the balloon board, she declared, “Begin!”

With her go-ahead, the man took the lead and fired off the first shot. To this, he succeeded; a balloon indeed popped. His technique and all were quite professional – at least, he did not come off as an amateur!

However, when the crowd laid their sights on the other competitor, they were left stupefied.

They could only see Yichen aiming at the balloons on the board with his gun, and in the next instant, those bullets he had fired off punctured the balloons with precision.

Right after, he reloaded the gun and pulled the trigger again. Every move he made was fluid like flowing water. At one go, the shots blasted off with a crushing force, just like the sound of thunder!

Bang!

Bang!

Bang!

The sounds of balloons popping rang about successively. This was, indubitably, a close match!

No. If both sides were to be compared, attentive spectators would notice that, on average, every shot Yichen fired off was a few seconds faster than the man!

Unlike the man's apprehensive pose, he was as composed, and confident, as a mountain. He looked over at the balloon board with steady breaths and sparkling eyes. His look of determination was unlike that of a child.

His movements were so seamless he seemed to be one with the gun; indeed, he was in perfect coordination with it.

It was too much for one to take in how quickly he loaded the gun. This was clearly an overwhelming showdown!

Everyone watched with bated breath.

The child was apparently the real expert!

Gradually, they all wondered how a six-year-old could have superb control of a gun.

Soon, the staff started the countdown.

“Eight...

“Seven...

“...

“Three...

“Two...”

At the last second, Yichen held up his gun. His emotionless eyes narrowed as his lips formed a stern yet sinister curve of a confident smile. He seemed to say he had this in the bag before he pulled the trigger!

The bullet whizzed past the balloon and ripped it apart.

The last balloon on the board exploded with a pop, and along with it, a point token fell onto the floor with a clatter.

“Time’s up!”

The staff called to stop.

However, at this very moment, the crowd had quietened to a deafening silence.

No one cheered; no one called out. Everyone was holding their breath, waiting for the staff to announce the results.

The young man was, apparently, confident of his result. He did a rough mental calculation and reckoned that he had punctured about 30 balloons, which was better than his previous record!

Chapter 431: He Lost!

The man was, apparently, confident of his result. He did a rough mental calculation and reckoned that he had punctured about 30 balloons, which was better than his previous record!

There should be no problems this time!

As the staff tallied the points, he looked at where Yichen was. The kid was eyeing the toy panda on the display shelf with his hands on his rear. The board, which was initially filled with balloons, was now surprisingly barren; none remained hanging off the board.

This... What's going on?

Did he pop all the balloons?

How's that possible?

The two staff members added up the last of their points and stepped forward to announce the results to the crowd.

(vit(function())())

“We will now announce the results! This gentleman here popped 35 balloons for a score of 400 points!”

Upon hearing his result, the man’s fist punched the air as he judged that victory was in the bag!

However, when his ears caught of the kid’s result, his smile instantly fossilized!

“This child popped 108 balloons for a score of 1025 points!”

The entire area exploded into a thunderous roar.

This was unbelievable!

This was simply a miracle!

Meanwhile, several people in the crowd hurled slurs in the man’s direction.

“He he! An adult has just lost to a child, yet he still thinks so highly of himself!”

“You didn’t hear his boasting earlier. I was right behind him in the queue. He kept blowing his horn about serving in the army and even said that the number of guns he had used is more than the number of breasts he has touched! He he! What an ignorant army riff-raff!”

“A person like him used to serve in the army? If a child can even crush him utterly, then he’s just an embarrassment to them! He he!”

“...”

The man, who was at his breaking point, suddenly pointed his finger at the staff and exclaimed in accusation, “That’s cheating! This kid cheated! 108 balloons – who’d believe that? How’s a child capable of accomplishing that?!”

The moment he said that, the crowd reacted in open ridicule at him for being unable to accept his defeat.

“We believe him!”

“Indeed!”

“We just saw everything. That child is simply better than you at the game!”

“Admit defeat! As an adult, not only are you inferior to him in skill, you are also a sore loser!”

“Popping the balloons with this gun isn’t child’s play; everything relies on experience and skill. A minute. Only a minute is given to do that. Loading the gun, taking aim, and firing a shot – all these already take up a second. I believe in that one minute, only 60 balloons can be popped at most!”

Yichen replied to him with indifference. “Don’t compare me with a trash like you who could only pop 30 balloons.”

The man immediately turned livid with rage from that humiliating comment spouted in a lukewarm tone by the boy. Thoroughly embarrassed, he demanded, “What did you say?!”

“I said you are a trash.”

Yichen seemed unwilling to show him any respect. “Didn’t you see me tweak the gun before we started the match?”

His point was that their guns had different optimal conditions.

The gun, which had been reassembled by Yichen, could fire five consecutive shots at one go, saving him a lot of time.

In his anger, only the man’s facial muscles twitched.

“Come here, child!”

The staff handed him a 1.5-meter tall toy panda with a smile. His arms were suddenly full of it.

This toy panda was, true to its name, huge. Standing at 1.5 meters tall, it was soft to the touch and comfortable to hug. Holding it in his arms, Yichen was almost dwarfed by it.

Feeling truly satisfied, he then carried it away.

However, with both hands holding the toy panda, he was suddenly in a distress. He won this just because he wanted to gift it to that little boy – his younger brother!

Chapter 432: You Are Asking for a Beating, Kid!

However, with both hands holding the toy panda, he was suddenly in a distress. He won this just because he wanted to gift it to that little boy – his younger brother!

He was now troubled; he did not know how to give this to his brother.

Just as he was in a dilemma, it occurred to him that someone was following him.

He had a keen instinct. Since his vision was somewhat blocked by the giant panda in his arms, he settled with looking on the ground past his shoulder as he continued to walk forward.

From that angle, he spotted a long shadow separate from his moving to wherever he went.

Yichen took a mental note of this. At a bend, he left the toy panda on a bench and spun around, only to see the man whom he had just defeated come after him!

“What are you trying to achieve by following me?”

(vit(function()){)

Yichen was highly vigilant. A peer at him, and he knew that the man harbored ill will. Thus, he was on guard against him.

The man sneered before breaking into a sinister laugh. “Kid, you’re crazy, aren’t you? Do you know that you’ve utterly humiliated me today?”

This imp came out of nowhere; besides completely humiliating him in front of a big crowd, their battle was entirely witnessed by his girlfriend too.

Her boyfriend lost to a six-year-old. The result? He was obviously heavily ridiculed by her.

Thus, he was even more ashamed.

He, who was born as the proud offspring of an elite family in the country, entered the army at the age of 18. There, he also received special treatment, with everyone trying to please him because of his family background.

Getting humiliated by this mere six-year-old, he was, of course, wholly enraged. This was even more so since he had no channel to vent out his anger!

In the end, he found himself tailing the kid.

“D*mn you, imp! You’ve humiliated me thoroughly. How do you plan on compensating me for that?”

“Go back and practice your shooting skills; that way, next time, you won’t lose to a six-year-old.”

Yichen seriously spouted these vicious words, almost in total disregard of the man’s feelings.

“D*mn it, you! You’re really asking for a beating!”

As his words fell, he clutched his belt and lunged a kick at him!

In the twinkling of an eye—

Everything happened within a spark of light!

As swift as lightning, Yichen easily dodged the man's attack by shifting his body to the side. Before the man could retract his feet, Yichen positioned his palm vertically upright and slammed it down to the weakest point of his knee!

No matter what kind of hellish training a child went through, when compared to an adult, especially a recipient of similar training, there would inevitably be a vast difference in strength.

However, this did not imply that the kid was a pushover!

Yichen swung his palm down, aiming directly at the most brittle part of the man's knee! While he was not as powerful as the man, he was still knowledgeable about the human body's weakest acupoints.

The man let out a low groan as a convulsing pain coursed through him. His legs gave way, and he went down on his knees!

Yichen took advantage of the inertia of the man's fall to land a heavy blow onto his crotch by sticking out his leg.

“Umph!”

The man's face grimaced as his eyes darkened. He glared at Yichen intensely before throwing a forceful blow at him!

If it could be said that he had held back in that previous kick, then this punch of his was backed by his full power and was akin to the force of a thunderbolt. Indubitably, if this blow landed on the child, he would get, if not a bone fracture, a dislocated joint!

Yichen merely sneered at the man. He had already predicted the latter to make such a move due to being put in pain. While dodging

agilely, he grabbed the man's wrist and twisted it. The result was the man's wrist joint getting dislocated!

At the same time, learning from the man's moves, he threw a punch at his face.

Chapter 433: His Nose Bridge Breaks!

At the same time, learning from the man's moves, he threw a punch at his face.

The most fragile part of the human face was none other than the nose bridge.

Yichen targeted this area with his fist and heard a telltale crack soon after – it should be the sound of a nose bridge cracking.

He decided to match his attack with the man's – indeed an eye for an eye!

The man was unable to respond properly to his attack, and was now breaking into cold sweat from his gradually heightening pain. Exploding into a rage, he bared his fangs and opened his claws as he hurled himself at Yichen!

He no longer saw the opponent as a mere six-year-old but a rival with skill and strength to match his instead!

Watching him come at him, Yichen calmly leaped a few steps backward like an agile cat. He then evaded the punch and countered

with a roundhouse kick to the man's chin. The latter's body turned stiff, and he rolled on the floor, cradling his dislocated mandible.

(vit(function())())

Yichen marched over to him indifferently. Stomping on the back of his hand with a crushing force, he then grinded it with his sneaker. He grabbed a fist full of the man's hair as he clenched his right hand. Slamming the man's head onto the ground thrice, he threw three punches at his broken nose.

“Arghhhh!” The man wailed in pain. The ache was so terrible it made the fight in him completely dissipate.

Yichen let go of his hair, causing the man to collapse on the floor in a heap.

“Scram.”

He detested the man's body blocking his way and kicked him to the side.

Thereafter, he fished out a wet wipe to clean the blood from the man's nose on his hand. Yichen knitted his brows in disgust. He was quite squeamish about it. Thinking that rubbing it once was not enough, he pulled a few more wet wipes to clean his hand again. Once he was done with that, he tossed the soiled wipes to the man's face.

He felt for a lollipop, gracefully unwrapped it, and then put it in his mouth as he hefted the toy panda again. Shooting the man lying

motionless on the floor a ridiculing look, he derided, “You can’t even withstand a few blows.”

He proceeded to step on the man’s back and left.

...

Two pairs of parent and child casually chatted as they moved about.

After talking for a while, Yun Shishi gradually warmed up to Jiang Li despite the former’s reservation.

She was a person who was slow to get started. When she hung out with someone, she always left an impression of being distant and standoffish.

However, once someone managed to get past her defenses, they would discover that she was a rather kind friend to have.

Jiang Li recalled their former class monitor’s instruction to her and brought it up to Yun Shishi, acting as if it had just come to mind. “Shishi, do you know our class organizes a gathering every year? It’s been six years; everyone feels kind of lonely without you in each get-together! Our former class monitor has this wish of the entire class being present in the gathering once. What do you think?”

Following her question, Yun Shishi fell silent for a moment.

A class gathering...

She was hinting an invite to her!

Nonetheless, she was not very keen on attending the event.

It was not for anything else, except she was unfamiliar with all of them despite being classmates in university for four years.

A gathering with her former classmates would only make her feel awkward.

Jiang Li did not know what she was thinking, but from her sudden silence and look, she could deduce that the latter was unwilling to go, so she regrettably said, “Shishi, you actually don’t have to think much about it! I know you’ve suffered a lot back in university, but who hasn’t experienced these setbacks during their youth? All those bittersweet things are of the past now!”

Chapter 433: His Nose Bridge Breaks!

At the same time, learning from the man’s moves, he threw a punch at his face.

The most fragile part of the human face was none other than the nose bridge.

Yichen targeted this area with his fist and heard a telltale crack soon after – it should be the sound of a nose bridge cracking.

He decided to match his attack with the man’s – indeed an eye for an eye!

The man was unable to respond properly to his attack, and was now breaking into cold sweat from his gradually heightening pain.

Exploding into a rage, he bared his fangs and opened his claws as he hurled himself at Yichen!

He no longer saw the opponent as a mere six-year-old but a rival with skill and strength to match his instead!

Watching him come at him, Yichen calmly leaped a few steps backward like an agile cat. He then evaded the punch and countered with a roundhouse kick to the man's chin. The latter's body turned stiff, and he rolled on the floor, cradling his dislocated mandible.

(vit(function()){

Yichen marched over to him indifferently. Stomping on the back of his hand with a crushing force, he then grinded it with his sneaker. He grabbed a fist full of the man's hair as he clenched his right hand. Slamming the man's head onto the ground thrice, he threw three punches at his broken nose.

“Arghhhh!” The man wailed in pain. The ache was so terrible it made the fight in him completely dissipate.

Yichen let go of his hair, causing the man to collapse on the floor in a heap.

“Scram.”

He detested the man's body blocking his way and kicked him to the side.

Thereafter, he fished out a wet wipe to clean the blood from the man's nose on his hand. Yichen knitted his brows in disgust. He was quite squeamish about it. Thinking that rubbing it once was not enough, he pulled a few more wet wipes to clean his hand again.

Once he was done with that, he tossed the soiled wipes to the man's face.

He felt for a lollipop, gracefully unwrapped it, and then put it in his mouth as he hefted the toy panda again. Shooting the man lying motionless on the floor a ridiculing look, he derided, "You can't even withstand a few blows."

He proceeded to step on the man's back and left.

...

Two pairs of parent and child casually chatted as they moved about.

After talking for a while, Yun Shishi gradually warmed up to Jiang Li despite the former's reservation.

She was a person who was slow to get started. When she hung out with someone, she always left an impression of being distant and standoffish.

However, once someone managed to get past her defenses, they would discover that she was a rather kind friend to have.

Jiang Li recalled their former class monitor's instruction to her and brought it up to Yun Shishi, acting as if it had just come to mind. "Shishi, do you know our class organizes a gathering every year? It's been six years; everyone feels kind of lonely without you in each get-together! Our former class monitor has this wish of the entire class being present in the gathering once. What do you think?"

Following her question, Yun Shishi fell silent for a moment.

A class gathering...

She was hinting an invite to her!

Nonetheless, she was not very keen on attending the event.

It was not for anything else, except she was unfamiliar with all of them despite being classmates in university for four years.

A gathering with her former classmates would only make her feel awkward.

Jiang Li did not know what she was thinking, but from her sudden silence and look, she could deduce that the latter was unwilling to go, so she regrettably said, “Shishi, you actually don’t have to think much about it! I know you’ve suffered a lot back in university, but who hasn’t experienced these setbacks during their youth? All those bittersweet things are of the past now!”

Chapter 434: Fright in the Haunted House 1

“Shishi, you actually don’t have to think much about it! I know you’ve suffered a lot back in university, but who hasn’t experienced these setbacks during their youth? All those bittersweet things are of the past now!”

“I know.”

Yun Tianyou walked beside them and quietly listened to their conversation. When he heard of his mommy seemingly suffering

quite a bit during her university years, he felt a slight prick in his heart!

It should be... somewhat related to him!

He had heard bits of it from Yun Na. It was quite taxing on his mommy to juggle work, study, and him.

Rumors of his mother ‘bearing a child out of wedlock’ caused an uproar in the university. When the institution caught wind of it, she was almost expelled by the admin.

Thinking of this, even though he knew that this had nothing to do with Jiang Li, he was a little disgusted with her for some reason!

(vit(function())())

How could she just make light of the past and chalk it up to youthful indiscretions?

Were those so-called wounds no longer painful once they turned into scars?

Let alone saying that she sympathized with her, how could she know of the pain when it was not her who had been inflicted with it?

She claimed to be his mommy’s ally, perhaps even a friend, but she did have ill will, did she not?

Jiang Li had not noticed Yun Tianyou’s sudden reticence and solemnity at the side, and naturally, she was unaware of the little boy’s thought, so she just doubled her effort to persuade Yun Shishi.

“Shishi, do me a favor and go to the class gathering next month! Just take it as going there for me! Everyone misses you dearly. They don’t know how you’ve been for the past six years. Can you be there?”

She even showed her a message. “You see; our former class monitor even specially tasked me with inviting you there! I have such an arduous ‘mission’! Can you bear to see me fail it and be condemned by them?”

Yun Shishi was teased into laughter by her. “Why are you exaggerating?”

“Exaggerate? This isn’t an exaggeration at all! Six years; we haven’t seen you in six years! How many six years do we have in our life? After you graduated, you vanished with your diploma! I’m lucky to have a serendipitous encounter with you today – this is fate! No matter what, you must be there!”

Jiang Li was persistent and pleaded with her again and again!

In the end, she could not say ‘no’ to her plea and gave in reluctantly.

Because of this, Jiang Li jumped with glee. Holding Yun Shishi in her arms, she cheered loudly. She then shared this good news to the class’s group chat on WeChat.

The chatroom exploded with activity in everyone’s excitement.

While Yun Shishi was plagued with rumors in university, she was still the campus belle with the highest popularity.

Since everyone was finally going to be together for the gathering, after her disappearance six years ago, the person who was most excited about this was none other than their previous class monitor.

Jiang Li teased him. Clearly, she was in a good mood.

Unknowingly, they arrived at the entrance to the haunted house.

Yun Tianyou was somewhat in the mood to give the attraction a shot.

“Mommy, do you dare to enter?”

Standing at its entrance, he hugged her arm as he snickered with a brow slightly arched.

She stared at him in astonishment. “You want to enter?”

“I want; I want!” He playfully pouted. “I want mommy to accompany me into the haunted house!”

“But it’s dark inside.” Yun Shishi still had her reservations.

Chapter 434: Fright in the Haunted House 1

“Shishi, you actually don’t have to think much about it! I know you’ve suffered a lot back in university, but who hasn’t experienced these setbacks during their youth? All those bittersweet things are of the past now!”

“I know.”

Yun Tianyou walked beside them and quietly listened to their conversation. When he heard of his mommy seemingly suffering quite a bit during her university years, he felt a slight prick in his heart!

It should be... somewhat related to him!

He had heard bits of it from Yun Na. It was quite taxing on his mommy to juggle work, study, and him.

Rumors of his mother ‘bearing a child out of wedlock’ caused an uproar in the university. When the institution caught wind of it, she was almost expelled by the admin.

Thinking of this, even though he knew that this had nothing to do with Jiang Li, he was a little disgusted with her for some reason!

(vit(function())())

How could she just make light of the past and chalk it up to youthful indiscretions?

Were those so-called wounds no longer painful once they turned into scars?

Let alone saying that she sympathized with her, how could she know of the pain when it was not her who had been inflicted with it?

She claimed to be his mommy’s ally, perhaps even a friend, but she did have ill will, did she not?

Jiang Li had not noticed Yun Tianyou's sudden reticence and solemnity at the side, and naturally, she was unaware of the little boy's thought, so she just doubled her effort to persuade Yun Shishi.

“Shishi, do me a favor and go to the class gathering next month! Just take it as going there for me! Everyone misses you dearly. They don't know how you've been for the past six years. Can you be there?”

She even showed her a message. “You see; our former class monitor even specially tasked me with inviting you there! I have such an arduous ‘mission’! Can you bear to see me fail it and be condemned by them?”

Yun Shishi was teased into laughter by her. “Why are you exaggerating?”

“Exaggerate? This isn't an exaggeration at all! Six years; we haven't seen you in six years! How many six years do we have in our life? After you graduated, you vanished with your diploma! I'm lucky to have a serendipitous encounter with you today – this is fate! No matter what, you must be there!”

Jiang Li was persistent and pleaded with her again and again!

In the end, she could not say ‘no’ to her plea and gave in reluctantly.

Because of this, Jiang Li jumped with glee. Holding Yun Shishi in her arms, she cheered loudly. She then shared this good news to the class's group chat on WeChat.

The chatroom exploded with activity in everyone's excitement.

While Yun Shishi was plagued with rumors in university, she was still the campus belle with the highest popularity.

Since everyone was finally going to be together for the gathering, after her disappearance six years ago, the person who was most excited about this was none other than their previous class monitor.

Jiang Li teased him. Clearly, she was in a good mood.

Unknowingly, they arrived at the entrance to the haunted house.

Yun Tianyou was somewhat in the mood to give the attraction a shot.

“Mommy, do you dare to enter?”

Standing at its entrance, he hugged her arm as he snickered with a brow slightly arched.

She stared at him in astonishment. “You want to enter?”

“I want; I want!” He playfully pouted. “I want mommy to accompany me into the haunted house!”

“But it’s dark inside.” Yun Shishi still had her reservations.

Chapter 435: Fright in the Haunted House 2

“But it’s dark inside.” Yun Shishi still had reservations.

Yun Tianyou smiled at her. “What are you afraid of, mommy? I’m here, am I not?”

“This is an attraction for adults; aren’t you scared?”

Fairy Tale Valley also catered to youth, so some of the attractions were geared toward that age group. The haunted house was the most popular among the teens. As this attraction was aimed at this sort of visitors, the terror index was rather high. Those below the age of five would need parental guidance to visit this attraction.

The boy was not scared, of course. After all, some scenes inside this attraction were designed by him.

What’s there to be scared of? They aren’t real.

“I’m not scared. Let me protect mommy!”

(vit(function()){

“All right!” Yun Shishi readily agreed and then turned to Jiang Li.

“Are you both coming with us?”

“We can’t. Our Qianqian is scared of ghosts and the dark. You two can get going while we wait outside the entrance,” the woman replied resignedly.

“Eh. You both can try other rides in the meantime.”

“It’s okay. We are quite tired, anyway; I’ll bring Qianqian to the rest area for now.”

With that, she carried her daughter away.

The young girl was obviously reluctant to leave and kept waving at Youyou. The lolita only quieted down after some scare tactics from her mother.

Finally!

The boy had his wish fulfilled at last.

The reason he had chosen to visit the haunted house was to shake off that little nuisance.

He was supposed to enjoy some quiet time with his mother, but that little kid, who had come from nowhere, refused to leave him alone. This had greatly troubled him!

There was an extremely long queue at the entrance to the haunted house; even a few people were seen queueing at the VIP lane as they waited for their turn.

Visitors to the haunted house were entered by batch. Only fifteen visitors could enter each time to freely explore the facility for ten minutes. After which, a worker would lead them toward the exit.

While waiting, Yun Tianyou's attention was caught by a giant panda in his peripheral.

A child was holding a giant panda bear plushy as he stood in the crowd.

The panda bear was huge at 1.5 meters tall. The child holding it from behind was hardly taller than the plushy, and his profile was fully blocked by the soft toy.

From afar, it seemed that a walking panda bear was mischievously staring at him with its adorably shiny, black eyes on its cute, dummy face!

The boy let out a gasp. Was this not the panda plushy his mother had tried winning for him earlier?

He did not expect it to fall into the hands of another shortly after they had walked away.

His gaze was fixed on the panda bear for quite some time before he turned his head away.

Only then did Little Yichen, who was holding the giant plushy, let out a sigh of relief.

His heart was topsy-turvy in anxiety!

He had chased them all the way here sans any idea on how to pass this present to his twin!

Thereby, seeing them line for the haunted house, he followed them from behind. His heart started pounding like crazy when he caught sight of his brother scrutinizing the plushy.

Yichen's thoughts were galloping wildly. Apparently, his twin was still fond of the plushy as the latter turned to look at it again.

Before long, Youyou walked to where he was standing. Yichen wondered where he might be heading and peeked behind curiously. Seeing nothing of interest, he turned around, only to find Youyou stopping just in front of him!

From his view, he could see that his brother was wearing a pair of English-style cricket shoes.

Caught unprepared, he stood with bated breath.

Chapter 436: Fright in the Haunted House 3

Caught unprepared, he stood with bated breath.

This was these two little lads' first time coming together at such proximity, segregated only by a giant toy.

Youyou was unable to see the boy's face as it was blocked by the giant panda, but from the latter's height, he could deduce that he should be older than him.

“Did your daddy win this plushy for you?”

Shyly, Little Yichen's muffled voice was heard answering from behind the giant toy. “No... I-I won this!”

“Is that the game where you have to shoot the balloons to win the prize?” Youyou was gobsmacked.

“Eh!”

(vit(function())())

He smiled. “Wow! Amazing!”

Still, inwardly, he was in doubt. How is that possible?

That game was deemed as difficult even by most adults. How could a mere child beat that challenge?

On second thought, the usual math equations he was solving would also stump most high school scholars, so this should not take him by surprise.

“What’s the score you got?” Yun Tianyou was rather curious.

His twin replied, “109 balloons for over a thousand points, I think.”

Youyou was speechless. “...”

109 balloons in a minute...

Is this a joke?

He started wondering at the truthfulness of the kid’s claim.

If a child could win that game, should he worry about the game’s low standard?

He asked again, “Do you like this soft toy?”

Being a shareholder of Fairy Tale Valley, hearing the visitors’ feedback was one of his responsibilities.

The other’s muffled reply came. “No, I don’t like...”

“Eh? Then, why did you...”

“This is for my brother...”

Little Yichen’s current, shy reply belied his typical aloofness.

“My younger brother likes it, so I won this prize for him. I want to give this to him as a present!”

Somehow, Little Yichen’s stiff answer struck a chord in Youyou’s heart. The latter’s mouth arched into an approving smile. “You are such a good older brother! Hope you have fun here.”

He walked back to his line after saying that.

The former carefully poked half of his head from behind the big panda bear.

Watching the latter’s back move away from him, he had this impulse to jump out and give a big hug to this unknown brother he had only seen in his dreams before!

Still, he had his reservations.

What if his brother did not like him?

What if his brother ignored him when he approached him?

His heart wrangled and tussled with his mind! This was his first time wanting to get close to someone yet being unable to do so for fear of rejection!

When Youyou returned, his mother asked, “Where did you run off to just then?”

“Mommy, remember that shooting game you played earlier to get me a prize? Well, someone won that giant panda bear! He’s there!”

He lifted his head and told his mother of this as he pointed in a direction.

Yun Shishi, following where he was pointing, spotted a large plushy among the queuers and was stunned for a moment. The giant panda bear was attention-grabbing in the crowd with its round and fluffy face and adorably dumb look. From afar, the toy seemed to have come alive and to be waiting for its turn to enter the haunted house!

Chapter 437: Fright in the Haunted House 4

The giant panda bear was attention-grabbing in the crowd with its round and fluffy face and adorably dumb look. From afar, the toy seemed to have come alive and to be waiting for its turn to enter the haunted house!

She took a closer look and saw that a child was actually carrying that plushy, only that the huge toy made him inconspicuous.

The 1.5-meter tall plushy practically hid the boy from sight!

She said to her son, “I wonder who is so good to beat that game!”

“I wonder about tha—” the boy seconded before suddenly exclaiming happily, “—mommy, mommy, it’s our turn!”

The employee stationed at the haunted house started to verify the visitors’ tickets. From Yun Shishi to Little Yichen, it was a breeze as there were only fifteen of them in the line.

When it was Little Yichen’s turn, the staff stopped him for he was by himself.

(vit(function()){

“Little boy, where is your mommy or your daddy? A child like you must be with a parent before I can let you enter, you know?”

His face peeked from behind the giant toy. In an innocent voice, he answered, “My mommy and brother went in ahead of me!”

The staff remembered verifying another child earlier who looked exactly like this boy. Thus, she let him go through without suspecting him of lying and just reminded, “Okay. Remember to stick close to them!”

“Thank you, aunty.”

Aunty...

The staff’s eyelids gave a sharp twitch. Oh, please. I’m still in high school!

The boy, unfortunately, did not notice her forlorn look as he tugged his panda plushy and hurried into the venue.

The girl had an instinctive thought and chased after him while asking, “Oh, yeah, little boy, do you want us to look after your toy for the time being?!”

He had disappeared into the crowd by the time she finished her words, though...

With its unique decor and oriental motif, this haunted house was modeled after the Japanese’s concept of what was terrifying.

Unlike those that relied on special effects and shock factor from the blood and gore to draw out people’s terror, the Japanese, through

people's dread of the unknown, supplied creepy images and eerie sound effects to induce psychological fear.

Once they passed through the thick curtain at the entrance, a world shrouded in darkness and filled with the unknown welcomed them!

The setting of this haunted house was a hospital building decaying from disuse. It could easily make one's heart tremble in fear.

There was no signage or arrow to indicate the route people needed to follow. The visitors were free to explore the interior of this building as it was designed to make them feel a sense of an impending doom and generate fear within a realistic setting.

There were the blinking dim lights, rusted chains, cracked dusty grey walls, and white bed sheets with blood stains...

Every tiny detail could make one's skin be filled with goosebumps.

The boy had skimmed through the introduction to this haunted house while he had been queueing.

It said that this abandoned building used to be a huge private hospital with excellent medical resources and facilities.

However, the hospital director, in cahoots with the mafia, conducted human organ trafficking. Healthy people were injected with anesthesia for their fresh organs; the hospital even went as far as to perform anatomy experiments on live patients...

The director was later exposed and imprisoned. Meanwhile, the hospital was shut down and abandoned. Rumors of it being haunted gradually spread.

The boy clenched his lips tightly.

Chapter 438: Assassination 1

Yichen pursed his lips firmly. When this group of fifteen visitors entered the haunted house, all of them went in separate directions.

He could only rely on the sounds to keep up with the mother and son pair walking ahead of him.

He was somewhat afraid of the dark, especially in such a setting, so he could not refrain himself from becoming a little flustered.

The little boy hugged the toy panda in his arms even tighter, as if by doing that, his fear could be somewhat diminished!

Fortunately, the two in front of him were walking slowly, as the dim lightings in the hallways were making Yun Shishi rather frightened.

In contrast, Yun Tianyou was calmly walking beside her, seemingly unperturbed by their spooky surroundings.

It was not because of anything else other than him knowing how the haunted house operated. He was among the first to experience this attraction and was perfectly clear of its routes, mechanisms, and the places where the staff in disguise would suddenly appear to scare people.

(vit(function())())

In fact, right now, he was leading Yun Shishi to a comparatively safer route; in this part of the haunted house, there were fewer mechanisms and people in disguise to scare visitors.

At the absence of staff workers pretending to be ghosts and monsters, she gradually let her guard down.

Yichen, who was still tailing the two, tried hard to avoid looking at the surrounding spooky props. He thought that this haunted house was simply designed to give people a scare; little did he know that the settings and props would be very life-like!

Although he knew that everything was fake, under this situation, he felt that he really was inside a haunted hospital!

Yichen hastened his steps. When he was just a few meters away from the two, he faintly overheard their pleasant conversation.

“Mommy, are you scared?”

“I’m not scared. I have Youyou to protect me,” she said in a relaxed manner. Dipping her head, she asked him back, “Youyou, are you scared?”

“What’s there to be afraid of?!”

Youyou chuckled to himself. He held on to Yun Shishi’s hand as they made their way into a dispensary. They were welcomed by many glass apparatuses in the small room, of which contained organs immersed in formalin.

The props created were so life-like they could easily send shivers down one's spine.

However, not only was Youyou unafraid of these spooky props, he even scanned them carefully, one by one.

Usually, before the visitors entered the haunted house, they would eagerly anticipate the fright factor of the place.

However, when they finally entered the haunted house, all would flee for the exit at top speed with their heads down, not daring to look at the setting within again.

While haunted houses in other amusement parks were crudely made, every haunted house in Fairy Tale Valley was carefully crafted to be realistic!

Because of its high scare index, many emergency stops were situated within the haunted house. If visitors found it hard to continue, they just had to go to one, and members of the staff would escort them out.

Yichen watched the two inspect the dispensary from afar. Suddenly, he heard quick footsteps behind him.

His senses were extremely sensitive, be it his sight or hearing.

Thus, highly alert, he intuitively halted his steps with slightly furrowed brows.

In this silence, the footsteps were easily heard.

Yichen put down his toy panda and hid himself behind a corner. He spotted a man slowly moving toward where he was previously standing.

The man was dressed in a black outfit to blend in with his surroundings, and he wore a cap to hide his face.

Yichen sized him up in detail and noted that the man was clutching something on his waist. His hand stayed there the entire time.

His vision was sharp even in the dark, so he recognized the bulge to be a revolver at once!

Chapter 439: Assassination 2

His vision was sharp even in the dark, so he recognized the bulge to be a revolver at once!

From its silhouette, he deduced it for a Desert Eagle – a powerful gun with high penetrating power.

A revolver? How was this person able to walk around with it here?

How was he able to get such a destructive weapon past the security at the entrance?

Before Yichen could think further on this, he saw the man kick the toy panda aside and then he proceeded forward.

He gave a start when he thought of the mother-son pair just ahead. Knowing that the two were about to encounter trouble, he cautiously caught up to the man pronto...

In the dispensary, Youyou had yet to realize the impending danger and was still excitedly examining the props in the apparatuses.

(vit(function())())

Beside him, Yun Shishi was panic-stricken as she thought that such an attraction was unsuitable for a child of Youyou's age.

What worried her more was that he did not seem to be horrified by all these; on the contrary, he showed curiosity about the haunted house's layout and design.

Worried that this could have a bad influence on the child's mentality, she felt a little remorseful for entering the place. (Boxno vel. co m)

“Youyou, let's go! It's a little eerie here.”

Youyou glanced up at his mother and, noting the discomfort written all over her face, readily agreed, “Okay.”

The two were just leaving the dispensary when they heard footsteps getting closer to them. At first, they thought that it was an employee rushing over to give them a scare, but when the person was close enough, they noted his getup and found him to be suspicious.

He looked inconspicuous, yet he emitted a palpable killing intent.

This was especially the case with that pair of eyes concealed under the cap. When he slightly tipped his head, they noticed his cruel eyes holding a murderous look!

Youyou's heart sank in trepidation, and he went on high alert!

He remembered that he had not queued to enter this attraction earlier!

He was not a visitor!

He instinctively stood before his mother and looked intently at the man. He observed the man's hand reaching for something black on his waist.

Making out what it was in this dim lighting was quite strenuous for him since he suffered from a slight nyctalopia.

Yun Shishi, meanwhile, discerned what it was; the black thing was a handgun!

She sucked in a breath of cold air. A terrifying chill grew from within her!

Quickly pulling Youyou behind her body, she retreated a step while she shielded him from view of the man. She moved cautiously, treating the man before them like a dreadful monster – someone who would devour them whole at the first chance he got!

“You... Who are you? What do you want?”

She asked as she went on guard. She did not know the man's identity, so she dared not make a reckless move.

The man did not answer her question and simply lifted his wrist to point the gloomy object directly at them!

Her complexion paled in horror, and she fully shielded Youyou with her body right away!

“Careful!”

A child’s cracked yell echoed from behind!

The man turned around in reaction to the yell and saw a child running directly toward him!

Yichen was hugging the toy panda. Putting his foot on the wall, he pushed against it to propel himself up and deliver a beautiful roundhouse kick to the man’s face!

The man staggered a few steps backward from the attack. Seeing a chance arise, Yichen jumped at him like a nimble baby leopard and tried to wrestle the Desert Eagle from his grasp!

Chapter 440: Assassination 3

The man staggered a few steps backward from the attack. Seeing a chance arise, Yichen jumped at him like a nimble baby leopard and tried to wrestle the Desert Eagle from his grasp!

The man was apparently a professional killer who had undergone rigorous training, for his movements were dexterous as well. Swiftly raising his leg, he delivered a kick to Yichen’s chest. The attack

caught Yichen by surprise; it hit him squarely on the chest, and he fell to the ground.

Yun Shishi exclaimed from witnessing this scene.

The man climbed up to his feet and quickly raised his arm. Cocking the gun, he pointed it at Yichen.

BANG!

By the time the gunshot, which was moderated by a suppressor, rang about, Yichen had already rolled to the side with his toy panda. (Boxno vel. co m)

The man pointed the gun anew at him and fired consecutive shots!

(vit(function())()

Bang, bang, bang!

The smell of gunpowder quickly filled the enclosed space.

Yichen skillfully darted between the shots, only receiving a few grazes with the stuffed toy acting as his shield. Still, when he saw what had become of the toy panda, with many holes littering its body, which was made of cotton—

This was a present he had won for Youyou, but he had...

Unable to contain his rage, his eyes slightly blazed as a dagger swiftly slid out from his sleeve!

Whenever he left the house, he always made sure to bring a weapon with him for self-defense!

Security was, needless to say, tight within Fairy Tale Valley, but this was only when it involved adults.

Right now, this dagger became handy. He swiftly flung the dagger to the man, and the latter attempted to dodge it, but the space within the haunted house was slightly confined, so it still managed to graze past his neck.

The man accidentally hit a cabinet filled with props as he was evading, and with a loud thud , it toppled over!

Yichen took this chance that the man was distracted to run over to the mother-son pair. Grabbing Youyou's hand at once, he told her, "Run! You two are his targets!"

She turned pale from shock. She had no time to think of anything and why this child was here; she just followed Yichen and ran.

As they reached a fork in the road, Yichen pulled Youyou toward the route on the right. When the latter glanced backward, he did not know when it had happened, but his mother was nowhere to be seen!

She probably got separated from them because of their obscure surroundings!

"Mommy..." Youyou was distraught and wanted to retrace their steps to find her.

Yichen firmly gripped his arm. "Don't go!"

“LET GO! I want to find my mommy!” In a state of anxiety, Youyou shook off his hand. Worried for his mother’s safety, he had no time to concern himself with anything else!

Yichen stomped his feet furiously and went after him. However, from around the corner on their way back, they collided with the man pursuing them.

Youyou jumped. At this moment, Yichen became sure of his suspicion...

This man’s target was his twin!

Yichen grabbed hold of Yun Tianyou’s arm at once and took to his heels. As they ran, he said, “Don’t worry; your mom will be fine. You are his target. He’s here to kill you! Understand?”

Youyou’s eyes widened in horror. This was somewhat unbelievable to him.

The man’s footsteps closed in on them from behind. Yichen looked over his shoulder nervously, only to see the man lift his wrist. He aimed at Youyou’s vest and was about to shoot!

Knowing the risk, Yichen tackled his twin to the ground.

Bang! The bullet sliced through the air and narrowly flew past the ends of his hair before shattering a glass apparatus on a cabinet at the side.

Chapter 441: Assassination 4

Translator: Atlas Studios **Editor:** Atlas Studios

Bang! The bullet sliced through the air and narrowly flew past the ends of his hair before shattering a glass apparatus on a cabinet at the side.

There was an emergency stop located not far from them. A few staff workers heard the ruckus and rushed over. Feeling as if he was grasping at straws, Yichen shouted, “Uncle, uncle! Someone is killing somebody! Someone is killing somebody!”

They did not take his words to heart, however. Many visitors of the haunted house would call out for help like this when they were scared out of their wits. In the end, it would always turn out that the staff in disguise had just given them too much fright!

Thus, they walked over to them, amused, as one of them said, “Child, you do not need to be afraid anymore. Uncle will take you both out.”

Halfway through his words, they spotted a man trailing the kids with a gun held aloft in his hand. The muzzle of the gun was still emitting cold smoke.

“Mur-Murder...”

Before he could continue, a bullet flew out and penetrated his throat. His blood sinisterly splattered across the wall.

(vit(function()){)

A thick metallic smell instantly spread through the air – it was absolutely pungent! (Boxno vel. co m)

In the blink of an eye, his body gave way and landed on the floor. With empty eyes, he had turned into an actual corpse.

Another staff worker was completely terrified and shrieked, “HELP! HELP!”

By now, a group of visitors were already on their way out. After hearing a gunshot, their eyes lay upon the corpse on the ground, and they descended into chaos.

“Murder! Someone got killed!”

“”HELP! AHH—”

Piercing screams incessantly thundered about!

Pandemonium broke out shortly at the haunted house as the crowd went out of control. With the surrounding chaos serving as their cover, Yichen helped Youyou up from the ground and groped his way toward the exit.

Youyou’s mind was in a mess. He was worried about his mother’s safety and, at the same time, he wondered about the man’s origin – why did he want to assassinate him?!

His thoughts were momentarily all over the place.

Yichen pulled him along as he fumbled around the haunted house. With everyone in a state of confusion and him being unable to recognize the way around, he was unable to locate the exit.

When he turned to look at Youyou, he realized that the latter was clutching his chest with his hand as he took quick breaths. Youyou’s

physical condition was poor to begin with and prolonged running easily drained him of his strength, inducing breathing difficulty.

“You... Are you all right?” Yichen looked at him anxiously.

Youyou continued to draw deep breaths. His small hand grasped his chest firmly while his facial features contorted in pain.

His left hand was feeling for something in his pants pocket. Finally, he managed to take out a pillbox. His brows became much more relaxed after taking the medicine in it.

Without much consideration, Yichen gritted his teeth and went over to carry him on his back.

Youyou was startled. “You...”

“Shut up. It’s more important to preserve your strength!”

Yichen looked around vigilantly as he said that.

Youyou fished out his phone to light the way. He shut his eyes and every emergency exit of this haunted house appeared in his mind clearly. He slowly said, “I know the way. Walk straight till you hit the end of this corridor before making a left turn.”

“You sure?” Yichen was a little skeptical.

“Believe me.”

“Okay. I believe you!”

With him on his back, he followed his directions and dashed toward the emergency exit!

Youyou's sense of direction was strong. Despite being in the dark, he could clearly decipher the fastest route toward the exit by relying just on dim lightings.

Yichen piggybacked him and ran swiftly. Among the children his age or even teenagers, his physical strength and endurance were simply outstanding. In a mad sprint, his nimble and agile feet quickly brought them out of the haunted house.

Chapter 442: Assassination 5

Yichen piggybacked him and ran swiftly. Among the children his age or even teenagers, his physical strength and endurance were simply outstanding. In a mad sprint, his nimble and agile feet quickly brought them out of the haunted house.

The crowd was also in chaos outside the horror attraction. Amid the confusion, he caught a glimpse of the man pursuing them flitting in and out of the crowd. With a start, he quickly took off in the opposite direction.

The man scanned through the crowd and eventually spotted the twins. He hastened to follow them!

Yun Tianyou regained his composure soon enough and struggled to get off his brother's back. Little Yichen, holding his brother's hand, saw the turning Ferris wheel not far from them and had an idea.

“Let’s go.”

Before the Ferris wheel, there were two long queues.

Little Yichen, with his two VIP tickets, smoothly made it through the VIP lane with Youyou. Together, they boarded the amusement ride.

(vit(function())())

The Ferris wheel slowly rose up with the two inside a cabin.

The older twin cautiously peeked at the crowd below through the window pane. With his excellent eyesight, he easily spotted the man looking for them on the Ferris wheel with his head raised. He was taken aback. This man isn’t simple!

He was able to keep up with them under such a tumultuous environment.

Is his tracking skill that good?

Compared to the look of panic on his brother’s face, Youyou was sitting calmly on his seat. He had already made a call to Li Hanlin and ordered a security team to secure the area around the Ferris wheel within the next five minutes.

Once he put down the phone, he sat in a corner with a deadpan look on his face.

Yichen turned around and saw his brother looking wan on the face with his pale lips.

He reckoned that the intense and nerve-racking chase earlier had exhausted his brother, though it might also be because he had not encountered such a dangerous situation before.

Hence, thinking that everything might have been too much for his brother to bear, he walked over and gently held the latter's shoulder. "Don't be afraid; I'm here to protect you!"

While he was doing this, he also felt apprehensive that his brother would not accept him!

"You? Protect me?" Youyou lifted his eyes to look at him and deftly avoided his touch. He seemed unmoved by his brother's desire to get close to him and kept his distance, instead.

It felt so foreign.

Little Yichen's hand, which was suspended in mid-air, slowly clenched into a fist before he withdrew it sheepishly.

He could still feel the warmth of his brother lingering on his back and fingertips.

It was so real and warm.

At the thought, he held his wrist. This brother is difficult to get close to than I first imagined!

"How are you going to protect me?"

Youyou could not help questioning the ability of this child standing before him. He was in doubt if a boy this young and weak could protect him!

“I’m stronger and taller than you. I can definitely protect you!”
Yichen stubbornly declared.

Youyou looked at him with cold and detached eyes. There was a trace of alienation on his face, which clearly indicated his rejection of this sibling.

The him who was currently sitting had to lift his head to look at his brother who was standing tall before him!

Little Yichen was anxious to prove to his younger brother that he had the ability to protect him, but it sounded wrong when the words reached Youyou’s ears.

Is this child laughing at him ?

“Hmph! Are you boasting that you are taller than me now ?!”

Chapter 443: Making up for the Lack of Intelligence with Height

“Hmph! Are you boasting that you are taller than me now ?!”

“I’m not—”

“Are you using your height to make up for your lack of intelligence ?” Youyou sneered.

His brother was caught off guard by his words and hurriedly explained, “I’m not laughing at your short height. Don’t misunderstand, please. Besides, I’m not stupid.”

“You aren’t stupid?” The younger twin snorted. “Tell me what the answer is to $1 + 2 + 3 + 4 + 5 + 6$, then. Give me the answer in five seconds.”

The older twin had no time protest and just quickly started counting with all the fingers in his fleshy hands. He looked dead serious as the time started to tick on.

“Time’s up; what’s the answer?”

(vit(function()())

“Is it 20?” His head spun from the effort of finding the total. He hated math.

“It’s 21! Stupid!”

“Don’t call me stupid...”

The older sibling pouted in resentment as his self-confidence was completely dashed! (Boxno vel. co m)

He was doing his best to protect his brother, yet the latter’s words to him were poisonous, and it seemed he did not reciprocate his affection!

Still, he liked this brother very much.

Unlike his haughty and aloof treatment to others, he became like a hapless fool when it came to this twin of his. He never needed to pamper anyone, but his eyes would turn soft whenever he looked at Youyou. He was anxious and restless to communicate himself properly with him!

“It’s your fault I got separated from my mommy; I can’t be bothered with you!”

Worried about his mother, who had been separated from him in the confusion, Youyou petulantly decided to ignore his older twin.

“Sorry; I didn’t do that on purpose. I didn’t know that she is your mother...”

“She’s your mother, too; don’t you know?” Youyou narrowed his eyes coldly at him. His thin lips unapologetically mouthed, “Mu Yichen, bear this in mind; she is your real mother.”

“She... is my real mother?” Little Yichen was dumbstruck!

He already accepted that Yun Tianyou was his full brother as there was no hiding their kinship with each other.

How could two people look so much alike in this world if they were not related by blood? Heck, they looked nearly identical!

Blood was thicker than water. He even shared telepathy with this brother of his!

It had been like this from as long as he could remember.

He would often be visited with the same dream. In all of it, a child with a face like his would walk ahead of him while he ran after him.

It was an endless path, and no matter how hard he tried, he never did manage to catch up with the boy in front of him.

Gradually, as he grew older, he would experience the occasional, inexplicable palpitations – even heartaches at times. Sometimes, his breathing would quicken all of a sudden, and he would pass out without warning.

The medical specialists were helpless toward his condition. They conducted a series of tests on him and declared him to be fit. He had no overt or hidden illnesses.

There was no clue at all.

However, the symptoms were unabated and would often appear capriciously!

The older he grew, the more attuned his soul was with that of the child in his dream, and he would experience similar emotions, be it joy, sorrow, or even pain, to the latter!

Slowly, he had come to accept this as the fetters of kinship!

Hence, the first time he saw Yun Tianyou, he did not doubt the latter's role in his life. He knew indubitably that he was his brother!

Chapter 444: Mu Yichen, she is your mother, too!

Hence, the first time he saw Yun Tianyou, he did not doubt the latter's role in his life. He knew indubitably that he was his brother!

One reason was that the feeling the boy gave him was similar to that kid in his dream!

However, despite knowing this intuitively about his brother, he never had a clue that his biological mother was Yun Shishi.

He just assumed that she was his brother's adoptive mother!

He reckoned that his brother was kept in the dark about his identity.

Thus, he was really stunned to be hearing this from him.

“I already have a mommy.” He reminded Youyou of this. “Brother, my mommy is your mommy, too!”

(vit(function())()

“Mu Yichen, I only have one mommy.” Youyou frowned, clearly upset with his presumptuous words. While he figured that Mu Yazhe had most likely never told his son about his biological mother, he was still displeased that his twin had readily accepted Mu Wanrou as his mother.

“Eh! I know. She must be your adoptive mother. I can see that she really treats you well... umm... There's a saying for that...” Little Yichen searched for the words with great difficulty and then slapped his forehead eventually. “Oh, yes! I remember now! It's ‘treat as one's own child’!”

The side of Youyou's eyes twitched sharply as he bawled, “How blatantly stupid can you be?! Shut up!”

“... You are so fierce.” Yichen was upset by now. “Can you not be so fierce with me? No matter what, I'm still your brother.”

“Since you don’t acknowledge your biological mother, how do you expect me to do so with you?” Youyou was really perturbed by his brother’s lack of comprehension.

He decided to ignore this twin of his whom he could not reason with truth.

(Boxno vel. co m) “All right. Don’t be mad!” The older twin sheepishly tried to coax him out of his bad mood. “Now isn’t the time to argue; I’ll look for your mommy with you later.”

The younger twin frowned when he heard that but did not contradict him.

“What’s your name?”

Youyou lifted his head. His eyes flashed with deliberation before he finally spouted, albeit reluctantly, “Yun Tianyou.”

“‘Yun Tianyou’? How do you write that?”

Suddenly, the older twin reached out and pried open the younger twin’s palm; this took Youyou by surprise, and he struggled to break free, but Yichen’s grip on him was just too vise-like!

Very engrossed in learning how his brother’s name was written, the older brother somehow failed to notice the resentment in Youyou’s eyes. With a few strokes on his siblings palm using his index finger, he asked with bright, clear eyes, “Is this how you write the word ‘Yun’?”

“Eh.”

“How about the ‘Tian’?” The older twin continued to scribble away on his palm. “Is this how you write it?”

“Eh.” The younger twin was starting to lose his patience. Why is this fella so stupid? He does not recognize Chinese characters!

“Eh. For the last word...” The older twin wrote a ‘you’ on his palm and asked with a frown, “Is this the ‘you’ in your name?”

Yun Tianyou furrowed his brows and replied unhappily, “It’s ‘you’ in ‘baoyou’!”

“How do you write that?”

“...” Antagonized beyond words, the younger twin icily spat, “Stupid! Don’t talk to me anymore!”

His IQ had been lowered in the company of his older brother!

In the end, Little Yichen took out his mobile phone to search for the word himself.

Youyou spotted the watch on his wrist. Frowning, he grabbed his older brother’s wrist and asked, “Where did you get this watch from?”

“It’s a birthday gift from my daddy!” the older twin replied. Seeing a similar watch on his younger twin’s wrist, he asked curiously, “Who gave you your watch?”

“It’s from my mommy; it’s also a birthday gift.”

Chapter 444: Mu Yichen, she is your mother, too!

Hence, the first time he saw Yun Tianyou, he did not doubt the latter's role in his life. He knew indubitably that he was his brother!

One reason was that the feeling the boy gave him was similar to that kid in his dream!

However, despite knowing this intuitively about his brother, he never had a clue that his biological mother was Yun Shishi.

He just assumed that she was his brother's adoptive mother!

He reckoned that his brother was kept in the dark about his identity.

Thus, he was really stunned to be hearing this from him.

“I already have a mommy.” He reminded Youyou of this. “Brother, my mommy is your mommy, too!”

(vit(function())())

“Mu Yichen, I only have one mommy.” Youyou frowned, clearly upset with his presumptuous words. While he figured that Mu Yazhe had most likely never told his son about his biological mother, he was still displeased that his twin had readily accepted Mu Wanrou as his mother.

“Eh! I know. She must be your adoptive mother. I can see that she really treats you well... umm... There's a saying for that...” Little Yichen searched for the words with great difficulty and then slapped his forehead eventually. “Oh, yes! I remember now! It's ‘treat as one's own child’!”

The side of Youyou's eyes twitched sharply as he bawled, "How blatantly stupid can you be?! Shut up!"

"... You are so fierce." Yichen was upset by now. "Can you not be so fierce with me? No matter what, I'm still your brother."

"Since you don't acknowledge your biological mother, how do you expect me to do so with you?" Youyou was really perturbed by his brother's lack of comprehension.

He decided to ignore this twin of his whom he could not reason with truth.

(Boxno vel. co m) "All right. Don't be mad!" The older twin sheepishly tried to coax him out of his bad mood. "Now isn't the time to argue; I'll look for your mommy with you later."

The younger twin frowned when he heard that but did not contradict him.

"What's your name?"

Youyou lifted his head. His eyes flashed with deliberation before he finally spouted, albeit reluctantly, "Yun Tianyou."

"'Yun Tianyou'? How do you write that?"

Suddenly, the older twin reached out and pried open the younger twin's palm; this took Youyou by surprise, and he struggled to break free, but Yichen's grip on him was just too vise-like!

Very engrossed in learning how his brother's name was written, the older brother somehow failed to notice the resentment in Youyou's

eyes. With a few strokes on his sibling's palm using his index finger, he asked with bright, clear eyes, "Is this how you write the word 'Yun'?"

"Eh."

"How about the 'Tian'?" The older twin continued to scribble away on his palm. "Is this how you write it?"

"Eh." The younger twin was starting to lose his patience. Why is this fella so stupid? He does not recognize Chinese characters!

"Eh. For the last word..." The older twin wrote a 'you' 你 on his palm and asked with a frown, "Is this the 'you' in your name?"

Yun Tianyou furrowed his brows and replied unhappily, "It's 'you' in 'baoyou' 包佑!"

"How do you write that?"

"..." Antagonized beyond words, the younger twin icily spat, "Stupid! Don't talk to me anymore!"

His IQ had been lowered in the company of his older brother!

In the end, Little Yichen took out his mobile phone to search for the word himself.

Youyou spotted the watch on his wrist. Frowning, he grabbed his older brother's wrist and asked, "Where did you get this watch from?"

“It’s a birthday gift from my daddy!” the older twin replied. Seeing a similar watch on his younger twin’s wrist, he asked curiously, “Who gave you your watch?”

“It’s from my mommy; it’s also a birthday gift.”

Chapter 445: Hold on to Me and Do Not Let Go!

“It’s from my mommy; it’s also a birthday gift.” A thought flashed across Youyou’s mind, and he asked, “Are the GPS and Bluetooth functions on your watch enabled?”

“They are.”

“Disable them!” he commanded immediately.

“What’s the matter?”

“Don’t ask too many questions. Just turn them off!” Saying this, he proceeded to disable the Bluetooth and GPS functions on his watch.

Yichen could not fathom why he issued such a request but still followed suit.

(Boxno vel. co m) Right off the bat, Youyou sensed something amiss with this.

(vit(function())()

Another unusual thing was that one rotation of the Ferris wheel should only take five minutes, yet it showed no signs of stopping despite rotating for more than ten minutes.

It was still going until now.

Was there a malfunction ?

A tinge of unease surfaced in his heart. He was sure that a simple malfunction of the Ferris wheel would not keep it running for such a long time.

He stood up and walked to the door. He held it for support as he looked outside and at the crowd below.

All of a sudden, the machinery gave a violent heave, and the capsule consequently shook with much fervor for a while. Just like that, the machinery ceased to operate!

Due to the abrupt breakdown of the Ferris wheel, all safety mechanisms were released, and the capsule door was automatically unlocked.

Youyou's body swayed along with the shaking of the capsule. Losing his footing, he extended his hand to grab a hold of the door's handle.

However, he did not expect the door to be pushed open by his grip!

At this moment, he was leaning all his weight on the door.

Thus, when the safety lock of it was released, the door subsequently flung open and his body tipped toward the open door!

Youyou was aghast!

The capsule they were currently in was at the highest point of the Ferris wheel.

They were several meters above ground. A strong wind swept his hair into a mess. At present, the door could no longer support his weight and he continuously slipped forward!

His expression had turned deathly white. The accident occurred too quickly, and before he could even react, his body was already halfway hanging outside!

“YOUYOU!”

He was about to fall off when Yichen threw himself over and desperately grasped his arm!

His body was hanging outside the capsule and his legs were dangling in the air. His one hand was gripping the edge of the capsule with much effort and another was being firmly grasped by Yichen!

As quick as his movements were, Yichen was still dragged by half a meter by Youyou, who was hanging precariously in the air.

Yun Tianyou raised his eyes and was met with Yichen's reddened face due to overexerting his body. Veins gradually popped up on his arm and beads of cold perspiration trickled down from his forehead to his cheeks.

He was amazed by the strength in Yichen's arm; he was only holding one of his arms, yet he was able to sustain his entire body's weight!

Yichen clutched his hand strenuously. Alas, the capsule, which was suspended in mid-air, continuously swung about. He had to bear all of Yun Tianyou's weight as he strove to maintain his center of gravity!

The machinery had stopped functioning due to a faulty mechanism or something else.

Yichen's body gradually slid outside. Realizing that they were about to completely slip out of the capsule, he clenched his teeth and grabbed onto the window edge; he had barely managed to stabilize their situation with this!

Youyou's arm was being stretched to the limit by his older twin's firm grasp. The intense pain he felt from a torn muscle tissue instantly drenched his back with cold sweat!

Yichen was not doing any better. One of his arms had to support his twin's entire weight; if it were not for his training, at this point in time, this arm would surely be dislocated!

“Hold on to me and don't let go!”

Chapter 446: Trapped in Mid-air

“Hold on to me and don't let go!” Yichen managed to squeeze these words out of his mouth.

Yun Tianyou held his wrist in return and felt its intense and constant trembling. As he looked up at his brother's small face which was currently drenched in cold sweat, his heart instantly ached!

He gritted his teeth as he tried to figure out a way to climb back into the capsule.

(Boxno vel. co m) He knew that Yichen could not hold on for long.

Unfortunately, the freely suspended capsule had been tipped to the side; it was no longer steady. He could feel it rocking with just a slight movement.

After a few attempts, he gave up. For now, he quickly composed himself as he tried to come up with a way for them to get out of their perilous situation!

Beads of perspiration littering his face fell and were carried away by the high winds into the vast skies as he raced against time for a solution to their dangerous quandary.

(vit(function())())

He was admittedly partly nervous and afraid. He weighed the consequences in his head; there was a limit to what a child could do. Although Yichen was unwilling to let go of him, prolonged stress on the arm due to his heavy weight could cause it to cramp, get dislocated, or even be fractured!

The two would eventually fall due to Yichen losing control of his arm!

Yichen, whose strength was almost exhausted by now from holding on to his brother, gritted his teeth as he willed himself not to collapse!

Investing his body and mind into holding on to his brother, he simply had no strength left in him to think of anything else. The situation, thus, turned into a deadlock!

Yun Shishi felt her way around the haunted house for quite some time after being separated from the two little boys.

Perhaps it was due to another matter completely stressing her out, but despite being alone in the dark haunted house, her fear of the terrifying props was now completely gone!

Therefore, when she carelessly fell onto the ground and accidentally touched a fake decomposing corpse, she felt no fear at all!

The only thought in her mind was how the two kids were faring.

Did anything happen to them?

She was worried – worried to the point of almost breaking down.

She relied purely on her poor sense of direction and eventually happened upon an emergency stop with much difficulty. No staff was stationed there, however. Luckily, there was an emergency map on the table. She grabbed the map, as if she had discovered a valuable treasure, and referred to the escape route indicated on it. When she finally got out of the haunted house, she noticed that her surroundings were in chaos; cries for help were heard from time to time.

With her voice trembling from anxiety, she tried to search for any traces of the two boys within the masses.

“I’m sorry; have you seen two six-year-olds...

“Hello. May I ask if you’ve seen two children... ”

Many turned to her indifferently.

While she was under extreme distress, she overheard someone talking in the crowd. “Let’s go have a look! The Ferris wheel malfunctioned, and two children are stuck up there!”

The moment she heard that, she scoured through the crowd without a care, grabbed the speaker’s collar, and frantically asked, “Did you just say that there are two children stuck up in the Ferris wheel?”

“... Yes!”

“What do they look like?”

“I can’t see them clearly. I only know that the two are children...”

After the person said that, she dashed in the direction of the Ferris wheel.

The amusement ride was not far from the haunted house, so she quickly arrived at its location. Li Hanlin also happened to arrive at this moment with several security personnel. The well-trained security guards astutely cordoned off the Ferris wheel. Yun Tianyou was clear about him being followed by an unidentified armed person, who seemed to be out to kill him. Because of this, the agent was on high alert, and regardless of a person’s identity, even if it were a child, he had the guards prevent them from getting close to the Ferris wheel!

Chapter 447: Hanging by a Precarious Thread

Because of this, the agent was on high alert, and regardless of a person's identity, even if it were a child, he had the guards prevent them from getting close to the Ferris wheel!

When Yun Shishi hurried over, she was, likewise, chased away by the guards. Being somewhat muddle-headed, she was incessantly shoved around and warned by them.

As she was being pushed, she looked up and quickly spotted the two children on the edge of the capsule. She might not have perfect vision, but she still easily recognized the children from the color of their clothes. Right away, she identified the one hanging outside the capsule to be Youyou!

“YOUYOU!”

She cried and struggled anew. “Those two up there are my children! They're in danger! I can't leave; I can't leave...”

However, the security guards merely ignored her explanation, for Li Hanlin had specifically instructed them to deny everyone entry!

She pleaded with tears welling up in her eyes. “I don't know who is giving you orders, but please understand that I am their mom! Please notify the person in charge on my behalf to let me in!”

(vit(function())()

(Boxno vel. co m) The two security guards eyed each other; eventually, pity stirred in their hearts. They perceived her to be

innocuous, yet they dared not let their guards down, so they sent someone over to file a report.

Li Hanlin came over after a short while, and when he saw her, he greeted her right away. “Madam Yun, you’re here!”

“Mr. Li, why are you here...” she was momentarily stunned, but she could not concern herself with other things. “Youyou is up there. Both my children are up there; what should I do?”

“Don’t panic. I’ve already tasked someone to think of a plan!” he then held up his walkie-talkie. “When exactly are the rescuers coming in?”

“Mr. Li, we are doing our best to think of a way to rescue the kids!” the person over the walkie-talkie replied.

“D*mn it!” he cursed, grinding his teeth.

A worker had just reported to him that the malfunction was not due to the machinery having issues – it was human error.

Human error. This meant that the malfunction was not accidental – it was premeditated!

He sent some of his staff to check the security footage. However, before the Ferris wheel malfunctioned, the wires of the CCTV were cut by someone, so all the security footage in that period were lost.

He could not think of anything else at present and could only wait for reinforcements to arrive.

Although the problem was fixed, the children were still in danger; their safety took priority, so the machinery could not be turned on.

Yun Shishi stood trembling at the bottom of the Ferris wheel as she stared in horror at the capsule that was suspended at the highest point. As it was slanted to one side, the capsule seemed to be on the verge of falling while Youyou's body hung outside of it. She was clueless on how long he could persist. As the high winds raged around the suspended capsule, her heart clenched, for she was reminded of how weak and frail her son's body was.

Her hand flew to her mouth in anxiety and tears poured down her face. She wanted to do something, but right now, she was powerless. The only thing she could do was watch on!

Her entire body was flooded with helplessness and dread.

If she could, she would unhesitatingly exchange her life for her children's safety!

Yichen and Youyou have been stranded in the capsule for more than 10 minutes already.

They were almost drained of their physical strength...

This was especially the case for Yichen; his clothes were entirely soaked in sweat. Nonetheless, with a determined and focused look on his face, his one hand clung on to a safety handle within the capsule and the other held Youyou's arm firmly.

Chapter 448: I will not let go of your hand!

Nonetheless, with a determined and focused look on his face, his one hand clung on to a safety handle within the capsule and the other held Youyou's arm firmly.

Yichen was holding on to his dear life on both ends. Unknowingly, he had been fiercely biting his lower lip from the effort, and this caused a streak of blood to seep through one corner of his mouth.

Youyou tried to grab the cabin door with his other hand, but the distance was well out of his reach, so he could only give up in the end.

Time ticked by.

Yichen's physical strength was running on empty.

He struggled to keep his eyes open, and even when beads of sweat dripped and stung them, he dared not to blink. (Boxno vel. co m)

Looking at his brother, he slowly opened his mouth. "Youyou, I'm afraid I can't hold on for much longer."

(vit(function())()

He knew the limit of his strength.

Ten minutes was the utmost he could hang on to him.

It was already considered as a miracle that a child like him could endure for long when even an adult man could not make it this far.

He knew very well that, if this were to go on, his arm would lose its sensation and might dislocate or even break...

Youyou was surprisingly calm it was almost eerie.

He was also aware that it had been an uphill task to persist for so long and that his older brother had done his best to save him without a consideration for his own safety. By now, the latter had reached his limit.

He wanted to open his mouth to tell him: If you can't hold on anymore, then you can let go!

At least, one of them would survive.

He also wanted to tell him: If I can't preserve my life this time, please help me look after my mother!

However, before he could say all these, his twin calmly said, "Don't you worry, though; I won't let go."

Stunned, the younger one looked up. His eyes slowly lost their focus as he stared dully at his sibling.

With his vision fuzzy and overlapping, Little Yichen revealed a rare doting and gentle expression, which was so unlike his typically aloof personality, as he declared matter-of-factly, "I am your brother; I will protect you!"

Youyou's heart shook from his sibling's shocking words!

In simple wording, with no preamble, and accompanied by a peaceful tone, his brother expressed his heartfelt feeling for him.

His calm and tacit lips, thus, curved into a soft smile.

If even his older brother refused to give up on him, then all the more that he should not give up!

He would not give up even if it meant that this struggle was an otiose endeavor!

He closed his eyes and tried to visualize the cabin interior. With a rough idea in his head, he said, "I have a plan."

With a frown, Yichen quickly queried, "What's the plan?"

"There should be a safety belt at the seat behind you. Can you see it?"

The older twin looked backward and, seeing the belt, nodded. "I see it!"

"It can bear the weight of about 200 kilograms. Can you grab it?"

"Let me try!"

"Don't do it yet!" He explained, "It is easy to dislocate your shoulders if you exert both at the same time!"

Startled, his brother could only ask, "What do we do, then?"

"I can hold onto your arm with my two hands; that will lessen the burden on it. With that arm, you can carefully reach for the safety belt and then use it to pull me up!" He paused after saying that but quickly added, "You'll dislocate your arm without a doubt."

"All right! You hold on tight to my arm now!" Yichen seemed oblivious to his last statement and merely struggled to hook that

safety railing. Bending his body slightly, he made sure that his younger twin could hold on to his arm.

Chapter 449: Brother, I believe you.

“All right! You hold on tight to my arm now!” Yichen seemed oblivious to his last statement and merely struggled to hook that safety railing. Bending his body slightly, he made sure that his younger twin could hold on to his arm.

Their bold actions caused a stir among the security personnel watching from below.

They were professionally trained, so they knew very well the limits of a human body. They could tell that this was a dangerous move for Little Yichen!

Yun Shishi watched this scene with her heart in her mouth. Her pulse also hastened from extreme trepidation!

Youyou quickly grabbed hold of his brother’s arm. The strength in his arm was clearly inferior to his sibling’s, yet in this perilous situation, he amazingly found the drive to struggle for survival.

Clenching his lips, he held on to his older brother’s arm. “I’m holding tight!”

“You sure?!” Yichen was worried. He did not want his brother to fall the moment he let go, after all.

(vit(function())())

“Eh! Go and grab that belt!”

“All right! Be careful, okay! Tell me if you can’t hang on any longer!”

As he spoke, he reached for the safety belt.

He failed a few times, but he did not give up. Conscious of the time, as well as of how valuable every minute and second to his brother’s survival was, he doubled his efforts. Finally, with nearly insurmountable difficulty, he managed to snag that safety belt.

He looped the belt around his wrist a few times to ensure that it would hold fast. Turning his head over to his younger brother, he said, “I got a hold of the belt. I’m now going to pull you up; make sure to hold tight to my arm!”

“Eh!” Half a beat later, Youyou solemnly said, “I know you can do it; I believe you!”

“Good!” Little Yichen gave a slight smile and began to hurl him up with all his strength!

Clenching his lips tightly, he mustered his last strand of might and, with a huff, heaved Youyou into the cabin at once.

A crack sounded. His elbow dislocated with this last bit of exertion.

The joint of Youyou’s left wrist also broke with that sudden strong heave.

The two little lads rolled into the cabin, with the younger one quickly grabbing on to another safety belt and tying it around his waist to secure his balance.

There was a burst of stupendous hooray from below!

Yun Shishi stood dumbly on the spot and stared with wide eyes at this unbelievable scene. The two little fellows had managed to save themselves!

Oh, god. This is a miracle!

Only after Little Yichen had closed and locked the cabin door did she believe that a miracle had truly just happened. Emotional and tearful, her body slumped weakly on the ground. Her tension was released, but her heart had yet to calm down fully as she knelt on the floor.

Inside the cabin, the two little lads sat looking at each other. Yun Tianyou was dripping in sweat as he held his dislocated wrist. He looked at his brother's elbow and noted that it was broken and misaligned.

In that moment, his heart was full of turmoil.

His older brother seemed to be in great pain from his misaligned elbow, but his face did not show any indication of this. Instead, he was fussing more over him as he calmly asked, "How's your wrist?"

"It appears to be dislocated." The younger twin had a lower pain tolerance, but he had enough will to bear with the discomfort. Despite being bathed in a cold perspiration, he did not utter a word of pain.

After a moment's silence, he showed concern over his older twin's injury.

“Are you... all right?” he asked gently, his tone no longer sounding as detached, and foreign, as before.

Chapter 450: The Truth in Adversity

“Are you... all right?” he asked gently, his tone no longer sounding as detached, and foreign, as before.

Yichen was overwhelmed by his change in attitude. While this could not be detected in his expression, his trembling voice gave it away. “No, I'm all right!”

“Your elbow is dislocated. It should be painful, right?”

It should be very painful, in fact.

He was hanging in there for so long, so his nerves should be numb by now. On top of that, he had a dislocated elbow...

His older brother quickly assured him. “Don't worry about me; I'm used to it. This is common during my training.”

A child's world was simple. Perhaps, in the past, he had feelings of animosity toward his older brother and father, dreading the thought of them barging into the little heaven he had carefully built for his mother and him and snatching her love away!

(vit(function())())

However, from this adversity, he had seen his older twin's love for him.

He was not heartless or cold-blooded!

Moreover, with the fetters attaching them, he could almost feel pain in his heart as he eyed his twin's injured arm.

He made a call to his agent. Given the go-signal to start the Ferris wheel again, Li Hanlin instructed the control station to activate the ride through his walkie-talkie.

The Ferris wheel slowly started to operate.

The two little lads sat facing each other on opposite sides. They were in an embarrassing state with their hair tousled in every direction and face decked in a cold sweat. With cheeks aflame, they gave each other a look, and as if there was a tacit empathy between them, both broke into a sweet smile.

“You are stronger than I first thought.” Yun Tianyou mouthed a rare praise.

He hardly complimented anyone in the first place!

However, for this occasion, he meant it from the bottom of his heart.

If it were not for Yichen's strong physique that had carried them so far, he could not imagine what fate would have befallen him.

Blushing at the praise, the older twin opened his mouth a few times, but no words would come forth.

He was obviously shy.

The Ferris wheel slowly descended to the ground, and with the visitors streaming out of the cabins one by one, the security guards' hands were full dispersing them.

As Youyou and Yichen walked out while holding their arms, Yun Shishi broke through the human barricade and rushed to the two.

Little Yichen saw her running toward them and could feel a surge of warmth flowing into his heart.

Laying his eyes on this woman after this life-and-death struggle, he was still unable to figure out the truth. Who was this woman exactly, and was she really his biological mother? Somehow, his heart felt warm and fuzzy at the thought. It would be great if this loving and gentle lady was truly his real mother.

He did not hold much attachment to Mu Wanrou.

After all, not being her biological son, her love for him was superficial at best. Her love was just a perfunctory display of indulgence, so he could naturally not sense any familial bond with her, and, in fact, he felt removed and detached from her!

As for this lady before him, he really liked her! If she really was his real mother, he would accept her without reservations!

He must be blessed to have her as his mother, in fact!

The boy became rather nervous as he held his fist tightly!

When Youyou saw her, the composure on his face instantly melted into a look of grievance and shock. His small mouth folded into a pout with tears filling his eyes.

“Mommy... wuuu...”

His crying voice astounded his older brother.

The incredulous shock and fear on his face looked even worse now than his expression in that moment of grave danger earlier.

Why...

Chapter 450: The Truth in Adversity

“Are you... all right?” he asked gently, his tone no longer sounding as detached, and foreign, as before.

Yichen was overwhelmed by his change in attitude. While this could not be detected in his expression, his trembling voice gave it away.

“No, I’m all right!”

“Your elbow is dislocated. It should be painful, right?”

It should be very painful, in fact.

He was hanging in there for so long, so his nerves should be numb by now. On top of that, he had a dislocated elbow...

His older brother quickly assured him. “Don’t worry about me; I’m used to it. This is common during my training.”

A child's world was simple. Perhaps, in the past, he had feelings of animosity toward his older brother and father, dreading the thought of them barging into the little heaven he had carefully built for his mother and him and snatching her love away!

(vit(function())())

However, from this adversity, he had seen his older twin's love for him.

He was not heartless or cold-blooded!

Moreover, with the fetters attaching them, he could almost feel pain in his heart as he eyed his twin's injured arm.

He made a call to his agent. Given the go-signal to start the Ferris wheel again, Li Hanlin instructed the control station to activate the ride through his walkie-talkie.

The Ferris wheel slowly started to operate.

The two little lads sat facing each other on opposite sides. They were in an embarrassing state with their hair tousled in every direction and face decked in a cold sweat. With cheeks aflame, they gave each other a look, and as if there was a tacit empathy between them, both broke into a sweet smile.

“You are stronger than I first thought.” Yun Tianyou mouthed a rare praise.

He hardly complimented anyone in the first place!

However, for this occasion, he meant it from the bottom of his heart.

If it were not for Yichen's strong physique that had carried them so far, he could not imagine what fate would have befallen him.

Blushing at the praise, the older twin opened his mouth a few times, but no words would come forth.

He was obviously shy.

The Ferris wheel slowly descended to the ground, and with the visitors streaming out of the cabins one by one, the security guards' hands were full dispersing them.

As Youyou and Yichen walked out while holding their arms, Yun Shishi broke through the human barricade and rushed to the two.

Little Yichen saw her running toward them and could feel a surge of warmth flowing into his heart.

Laying his eyes on this woman after this life-and-death struggle, he was still unable to figure out the truth. Who was this woman exactly, and was she really his biological mother? Somehow, his heart felt warm and fuzzy at the thought. It would be great if this loving and gentle lady was truly his real mother.

He did not hold much attachment to Mu Wanrou.

After all, not being her biological son, her love for him was superficial at best. Her love was just a perfunctory display of indulgence, so he could naturally not sense any familial bond with her, and, in fact, he felt removed and detached from her!

As for this lady before him, he really liked her! If she really was his real mother, he would accept her without reservations!

He must be blessed to have her as his mother, in fact!

The boy became rather nervous as he held his fist tightly!

When Youyou saw her, the composure on his face instantly melted into a look of grievance and shock. His small mouth folded into a pout with tears filling his eyes.

“Mommy... wuuu...”

His crying voice astounded his older brother.

The incredulous shock and fear on his face looked even worse now than his expression in that moment of grave danger earlier.

Why...

Chapter 451: Mother and Son Reunion 1

Why...

He appeared to be calm and composed moments before. Why did he suddenly turn into a crybaby, as if his IQ had plummeted, before Yun Shishi?

...

Was this an act?

Yichen was confused.

Meanwhile, after making sure that all was well with his mother, Youyou started acting coy to get her to comfort him!

He was gifted at acting and easily summoned the needed tears.

(vit(function()()

Yun Shishi was devastated at the sight of his tears; feeling as if a knife were cutting her heart into pieces, she knelt before him right away and carefully took him into her embrace as she incessantly sobbed. “Youyou, my darling, don’t cry; don’t cry. Mommy is here now! Mommy is here now!”

She comforted him repeatedly while wallowing in her sorrow; the presence of Yichen, who was standing beside them, was momentarily neglected.

Youyou hugged his dislocated wrist and crooned affectedly, “Mommy, my hand hurts; it’s painful...”

He spoke in a dainty voice, which was worlds apart from the composed and solemn way he had carried himself while on the Ferris wheel!

Yichen nearly spat out blood.

He could not tell that this brother of his was so skilled at acting coy!

She closely inspected his dislocated wrist, and noting his ghastly complexion, her tears poured out, unabated, as her heart ached terribly. How she wished that all the pain he was feeling now was inflicted on her instead.

“Youyou, it’s mommy fault you got hurt! Mommy didn’t protect you well enough!”

Torn by grief, she constantly apologized to Youyou. She blamed herself for being unable to protect her child properly as she cried heart-brokenly.

Yichen stood at the side. His heart ached incessantly while perceiving everything before him.

He suddenly recalled that it was his birthday today. He should be relishing himself with his father, yet the Song sisters appeared out of nowhere. Never mind that they had spoiled the celebratory mood, they even sowed discord between him and his father. Furthermore, in this regard, his father, who should be his number-one ally, expressed his fury on him and even heartlessly abandoned him in this theme park in favor of the Song sisters!

He knew that this was punishment for disobeying his father’s direct order, but having just gone through such a perilous situation, the grudge and indignation he currently held for his father were greatly exacerbated!

Inadvertently, he could not help but somewhat envy Youyou; he had a mommy who cared for him. How wonderful was that?

Somewhat?

No. It was not just ‘somewhat’. He envied him ‘so much’ he felt it in his bones!

It was ‘so much’ he became a little jealous of his twin.

Feeling her sun-like warmth and wanting some of it for himself, he intuitively drew closer to her.

He pursed his lips as he greedily took a step toward her. A little closer... a little more... He thought he would be satisfied if he could just get a little closer to her!

Youyou caught his brother's small movements while in her embrace and looked over at him.

Perceiving that her son was distracted, she cast her eyes on the source of his inattentiveness. Youyou seamlessly retracted his body to make some space for his twin in her arms.

Latching on to her shoulders, he whispered, "Mommy, big brother saved me. His name is Mu Yichen."

Big brother...

Obviously, he did not call Yichen 'big brother' to his face, but these few words were proof that he had truly acknowledged him!

This was an affirmation that he recognized him as his older brother!

He was simply shy at expressing his thoughts. Nonetheless, he did make some space for him to be in her embrace because he acknowledged him.

Chapter 452 – Mother and Son Reunion 2 – Read novel online for free

Chapter 452: Mother and Son Reunion 2

He was simply shy at expressing his thoughts. Nonetheless, he did make some space for him to be in her embrace because he acknowledged him.

In the past, he never liked sharing a part of Yun Shishi's love with other children.

However, having thought it through, he reckoned he should not be that selfish!

This thought of his was simply too childish.

Mommy should like Yichen, too, right? If he were to obstruct them from being together, his mommy would surely feel down.

He would never do anything to make his mommy sad.

Yun Shishi glanced at Yichen who was feeling stumped as he stood before her. He held his dislocated arm while he looked a little worried and uneasy.

(vit(function())()

She laid her eyes on his misshapen elbow joint and felt even worse.

She did not know why he was in the theme park, nor did she know the reason for his sudden appearance before them and for his act of saving them earlier!

She only knew that this child, a mere six-year-old, had swooped in and saved Youyou and her in the nick of time!

She was, therefore, ever grateful to him and moved by him. Still, the frenzy of surviving a disaster still lingered in her heart.

She dared not say anything, though. If she were too aggressive, she feared that she would scare him to death or even cause him to shy away from her.

Thus, she worded her question carefully. “Yichen, are you... all right?”

When she called his name, his eyes bulged in astonishment. His lashes lightly fluttered and his lips slightly quivered.

Even after going through such a perilous ordeal, he did not shed a tear, but now, his eyes held a little moisture at the rim!

Her gentle voice was like a mellow streamlet flowing into his heart. His body, which was freezing from fear, was instantly warmed up by her voice.

Somewhat at a loss on how to answer, he looked a little foolish in his sheepishness. He wanted to tell her that he was fine and all right, for he did not wish to worry her.

However, deep down, he wanted to tell her that his dislocated arm was hurting like hell and that he was still in shock after going through that moment of danger. With fear still crawling in his heart, he, in fact, yearned for her comfort and care...

Alas, he was never an adept speaker, so he was clueless on how to express himself.

She was, fortunately, very patient. Reaching her hand out to him, she slowly opened her palm. “Come and let me have a look, alright?”

He stared at her outstretched hand. Her skin was fair like jade and her fingers were slim and smooth. They were truly pretty.

He recalled that Mu Wanrou’s hands resembled a bag of bones and her fingers joints were gaunt; they looked like five sharp blades. Yun Shishi’s hands, in comparison, were beautiful.

Yichen timidly nodded. He inched closer to her and glanced up at her face searchingly, only to see gentleness, patience, and warmth reflected in her orbs for him.

His heart was moved by her smile. He walked over to her, as if attracted by some sort of shared telepathy with her.

She cautiously hugged him into her embrace as he carefully hid his arm behind him in order not to worry her.

She noticed this little movement of his with her sharp eyes, however. Although the two kids did not grow up together, they sometimes displayed similar habits. (B oxnovel.c om)

Before, Youyou had the habit of hiding certain things from her. He seemed afraid of anything about him worrying or depressing her.

“Your hand is hurt, right? Let me look at it.” She was unable to hide her worry from her face as her eyes brimmed with sorrow.

Yichen shook his head. He was clearly the one hurt, yet he ended up comforting her, instead. “Don’t worry; it doesn’t hurt!”

Chapter 453: Daddy Does Not Want Me Anymore (1)

Yichen shook his head. He was clearly the one hurt, yet he ended up comforting her, instead. “Don’t worry; it doesn’t hurt!”

“How could it not hurt? Let me look at it.” Not listening to his protest, she gingerly held his hand, and indeed, his elbow was dislocated and out of shape.

She was so agonized her fingertips could not stop trembling. With her voice slightly stuck in her throat, she lamented, “It must be very painful!”

Recalling that unnerving scene of the Ferris wheel ceasing operation and Youyou’s body dangling outside the suspended capsule several meters above the ground, if it had not been for Yichen holding his arm tenaciously and firmly, grim possibilities would have been awaiting the two!

The capsule was so far above the ground it was just like being on the 20th floor of a building. What if they had fallen earlier? Certainly, they would have plummeted to their deaths!

She had almost lost the two of them...

When met with a crisis, she could do nothing other than looking on and letting her imagination run wild. She was still unable to get over that frightening scene and thought of it again and again.

(vit(function())())

“Thank you for saving Youyou. Thank you.” Her gratitude toward this child was heartfelt. She was in so much pain that tears pooled in her eyes as she hugged the unkempt children.

Yichen was a little affected when he realized that her eyes were wet. His mouth pried apart; he had the strong urge to shout that heart-warming yet unfamiliar word, yet he barely managed to slur out a few syllables in the end. In fact, he was already calling out to her repeatedly in his heart. Mommy... mommy...

He felt strange!

The woman before him was clearly a stranger, yet he felt this magical and special connection to her – a bond between a mother and a son.

Even though he was not by her side for the last six years, facing her now, he felt a familiarity surge irrepressibly from within him.

She could provide the warmth that Mu Wanrou could not give him.

However, bounded by what he had known all along, he was unable to yell out that word easily.

Even so, he greedily yearned for this warmth!

The ambulance promptly arrived.

The two children were carried out on stretchers and carefully loaded into the waiting ambulance. She followed them into the vehicle.

On the way to the hospital, the nurses ran a few tests on them. Sitting at the side, Yun Shishi's heart wrenched at their current state, and she constantly inquired about the two children's condition.

A nurse immediately comforted her with the results of the preliminary tests, which stated that the children's conditions were not grave. Still, everything else would have to wait when they reached the hospital, where more detailed inspections could be performed on the two children.

The nurse also pointed out that, except for their dislocated arms, the two should be more or less fine since they were still quite energetic.

It was only then that Yun Shishi was somewhat pacified.

Feeling a little worn down, Youyou informed, "Mommy, Youyou is tired. Youyou wants to sleep for a while."

Yun Shishi's lips pulled into an upward curve as she stroked his head. "Mm! Close your eyes and have a rest. We will reach the hospital soon."

"Mommy, you must tell the doctors that Youyou has a fear of pain, so they must be gentle and not rough with me." The little boy reminded her sternly.

She was teased into tears and laughter by him. The nurse sitting beside her also chuckled at that. "Little one, don't worry; we'll be very gentle with you. Don't you worry!"

"That's a weight off my mind." His knitted brows relaxed as though a burden had been lifted off his shoulders.

His witty laments triggered smiles from the nurses once more.

“He’s so cute. He looks so bright and his skin is so soft. He’s really good-looking!”

“Yes, yes. When he grows up, he’s going to be quite a looker. I’m afraid many girls will be charmed by him!”

Chapter 454: Daddy Does Not Want Me Anymore (2)

...

Yun Shishi shifted her gaze on to the older twin lying motionlessly on the other stretcher. Attracted by her every move and smile, he scrutinized her with much intensity.

When he saw that she was looking at him back, his face turned beet red, and he hastily looked away, not knowing where to put his hands in his rush.

She slowly reached out her hand and placed it on his.

The warmth traveled from her palm all the way to his heart.

His face blushed even redder this time as his heart pounded harder. Dong, dong, dong. He was so nervous he did not dare to meet her eyes.

“Are you alone?” she asked. “How come I don’t see your daddy with you?”

(vit(function()){)

His face turned sullen ever so slightly at the mention of his father.

“Daddy doesn’t want me anymore...” His tone was laden with dejection and grievance.

“How can that be? He loves you very much.”

“He really doesn’t want me...” The boy clenched his fist so tightly his fingernails almost punctured the skin of his palm.

“Don’t make wild guesses. What happened?” she prodded gently.

With a little nudging and coaxing, the little fellow finally poured out his woes.

He told her everything in great detail of how Mu Yazhe had brought him to the theme park as a birthday surprise and the intrusion of the Song sisters.

Toward the end of his recount, he spoke of how his father had ditched him for the first time because of Song Enxi. He was determined not to shed a tear, but her motherly care somehow set him off, and tears started falling uncontrollably from his misty eyes. It was apparent that he had been deeply hurt by this incident.

She was deeply affected by his tale, but she really could not imagine Mu Yazhe being such a heartless father who would leave his child alone in such a large theme park.

Li Hanlin shared earlier that the man had instructed him to safeguard his son while he was away.

While she did not agree with entrusting the child to the care of an outsider, she did not doubt Little Yichen's importance to the man.

As for the earlier incident, although the boy was in the wrong, the man, as a parent, should be patient enough to learn the real issue behind the willful behavior and to counsel the child on the correct way of resolving the conflict.

Ultimately, however, a father was not as sensitive as a mother and was unable to see a child's subtle, emotional needs through his rebellious act; he was, therefore, incapable of tackling the root issue.

For now, what she could do was untie the knot in the child's heart and make him understand his father's perspective rather than blindly agree with the child and incite further contradictions.

Thus, she said, "Your daddy definitely loves you a lot; you shouldn't think of him in that way."

"He only cares about Song Enxi. It's her he likes and not me!" With his eyes rimming red, the little lad tried to hold back his tears. "Today is my birthday. We are supposed to have a good time together!"

She continued to console him patiently and advise him not to overthink this matter.

The ambulance soon arrived at the hospital.

The two little fellows were immediately transferred to the hospital gurneys and sent into the emergency room for treatment. She followed closely behind until the nurses politely stopped her from entering the room; she could, thus, only wait for updates about the

children's conditions on the long bench at the waiting area in grave apprehension.

Time seemed to stretch indefinitely as she anxiously endured the wait...

Chapter 455: Mild Brain Concussion

Inside the doctor's office at a hospital.

Song Enya sat in front of a doctor with worry on her face. The doctor regarded her and the stern-looking man standing behind before he slowly informed, "The child has a slight abrasion on her head with a mild brain concussion. The wound has been cleaned and stitched with antiseptic. Don't let water get into the wound for the next few days and avoid any spicy food—"

"Stitch?" Shocked, she could not help but interrupt the doctor mid-speech.

"Yes. The cut required stitching as it was quite deep. The child probably hit the corner of the stairs as she fell down the steps." Adjusting the spectacles on his face, he continued to speak in a respectful tone.

If it were another patient that had repeatedly interrupted him, he would have lost his patience by now.

Unfortunately, this woman was someone he knew. She was not somebody he could afford to offend, so his attitude toward her was respectful and patient.

She was looking stunned and scared. “Is the injury that deep? Brain concussion? Is it that serious?”

(vit(function()){)

The doctor patiently explained, “It is a mild brain concussion and not a serious injury. There’s no treatment for that. The girl will be able to slowly recover after some rest!”

“Will this affect the brain? Like side effects...”

“No.” The doctor snorted inwardly. How can it be that serious? This woman must be a medical idiot.

She asked a few more questions, mainly if the stitch would leave a scar on her head.

The answer she got was that there would definitely be a scar and that growing hair from the spot with the stitch would be difficult. The good news was, as it was a small wound of the size of a thumb, only three stitches were required. It would be easy for girls to conceal such a flaw as they tended to have more hair.

Mu Yazhe was not thinking of Song Enxi, though.

He was not present when the commotion happened, so he could only piece the events from the children’s narration. All this while, the girl had accused his son of pushing her down the steps and of being a malicious bully to her.

However, knowing his son’s character well, one thing he was sure of was that Little Yichen would not resort to such crass behavior.

The boy was more mature compared to his peers; hence, he found them childish and hardly played with them.

It was unlike of him to provoke another child proactively, especially with such bad conduct.

The chaotic situation earlier just did not provide him the leeway to understand everything fully. Just Song Enxi's bawling was giving him a headache!

Under such a dire circumstance, he could only think of sending the girl to the hospital fast.

After the whole matter had quieted down, he reanalyzed the matter and could roughly picture the sequence of events. The two kids probably had a conflict, and regardless of who started it, the girl probably bit the boy first, which led into him pushing her away.

He had once warned his son never to use brute force on others; thus, Little Yichen was always disciplined and well-mannered.

The girl most likely hit her head hard when she tripped over the steps after being pushed.

He surmised that this was what had probably happened earlier.

As a father, his tendency was to believe his child. Besides, his indulgence to Song Enxi was just skin-deep. Little Yichen was his son, so first and foremost, his duty was to care and love him. If not him, then who should he care about?

He really wanted to give his boy a happy and memorable birthday.

Chapter 456: He just wants to teach him a lesson

He really wanted to give him a happy and memorable birthday. He rejected many business deals and concluded his meetings early just to return home and give his son a surprise.

Nobody expected for this birthday celebration to end in a fiasco, though!

The man led the way out of the doctor's office in big strides. Song Enya, who was following behind, wanted to say something to him but stopped herself each time!

This man's great image in her heart was irreplaceable.

She had loved sticking close to him since young.

If they were to follow the traditions, as her mother, Jiang Qimeng, was Jiang Yishan's niece, she would need to address him as uncle.

She found that term too formal and distant, however. She preferred calling him Brother Mu, which sounded more intimate to her ears.

(vit(function())())

Her secret admiration for him grew with age, and gradually, it developed into a crush and adoration.

Although they were connected by blood, this was not a restriction in the upper class where it was the norm for cousins to marry each other just to keep their wealth into the family.

Her dream, from the very start, was to become his bride.

This was her ultimate wish. Alas, him having a fiancée gave her the biggest heartache.

He was indubitably a perfect man to her. Haughty and snobbish, she deemed him as the only one worthy of her.

The Song family was the most influential among the elites in the capital. With their far-reaching power and status, only Brother Mu was compatible to her.

That Mu Wanrou was just a wild seedling from nowhere; how was she qualified to be his fiancée?

She really looked down on that infertile woman.

Seizing the right moment, she caught up to him and carefully opened her mouth.

“Brother Mu, there are some things which I’m not sure if I should tell you.”

The man was feeling troubled now, so he merely frowned at her words. He went to the smoking area, lighted a stick he got from his cigarette box, and took a drag on it.

The woman followed him to the area. Seeing his brows furrow coldly and sternly, she recalled. “Brother Mu, are you worried of Little Yichen?”

He only looked at her wordlessly.

As if speaking to herself, she continued, “While Little Yichen bullying Enxi is wrong, Brother Mu ditching him alone at the theme park is still harsh. Yes. He underwent a special military training before, but Brother Mu, could you really bear to leave him there alone by himself?”

Could he really bear to leave him there by himself?

Of course, not!

He regretted it the moment he left his son behind.

However, as his father, his authority should not be defied.

Little Yichen, especially in front of outsiders, had never gone against his words. He was ever strict to his son.

Under that circumstance, no matter how wronged the boy felt, he should learn to curb his unhappiness instead of adding fuel to fire with his defiant words!

It was befitting for an upper-class gentleman, even a six-year-old, to give in to a five-year-old girl. This was an unbending rule in the Mu household.

Yes, this rule could not be disobeyed.

Thus, all he wanted was to teach his son a lesson!

Besides, what was there to gain arguing with an insensible girl?

This was unacceptable!

Right now, however, the man chose to keep quiet.

How he disciplined his kid was his business. He did not like any outsider's interference.

Hence, his eyes held a trace of disdain at her words.

Chapter 457: You Have No Right to Criticize My Son

Hence, his eyes held a trace of disdain at her words.

Without looking at his face, Song Enya went on. "Still, it may not be a bad thing for you to teach him a lesson every now and then. One can't spoil a child too much, especially boys. If he isn't properly guided about manners at such an age, when he grows up, there may be a chance that he'll be like those rich good-for-nothings who only bring shame to their families. With this in mind, I think that what Brother Mu did is right."

She spouted these words thoughtlessly!

Mu Yazhe's eyes narrowed thinly in discontent.

"Enxi hasn't suffered such a grievance before; she is going to need three stitches on her nape. Oh, god. She has an inherent love for beauty. If she finds out about this, all hell will break loose..."

"Enya." He flipped the ash off his cigarette and took a final puff before snuffing it on the ashtray. He continued unhurriedly, "Mu Yichen is my son; Mu Yazhe's son."

“Huh?” For a moment, she was unable to read his expression, nor could she fathom what he meant.

(vit(function()){

“No matter how bad he is, outsiders have no rights to be overly critical with him.”

(B oxnovel.c om) The volume of his voice was not very loud, yet it carried a firm and frosty tone with it.

She finally returned to her senses with a jolt. Knowing that her words then were spoken out of turn, she became very upset. “Brother Mu...”

He regarded her solemnly as he spoke in a frosty voice. “I spoil you because you’re my niece, but it probably got to your head. Still, I hope that you are sensible enough, despite being pampered by everyone since young, to not cross my boundaries.”

She almost forgot to breathe. Her expression shifted a few times before she managed to pull an awkward smile. “Brother Mu, I’m sorry. I understand what you mean. I’ve said too much.”

“You should also ask your sister what she’s done to enrage Yichen.”

He moved in front of her. “It is his birthday today, and I’m supposed to be with him. In the first place, I shouldn’t have been with you two. Since this has happened, I’m not entirely happy about it!”

He was mad.

Shocked, she rushed to explain. “No matter how willful Enxi is, she will never...”

“Let this end here; stop talking about it,” he interrupted, irked. Then he bypassed her and left.

She knew that something had gone awfully wrong; thoroughly vexed with herself for her infallible attitude, she chased after him right away.

...

“It hurts. Aw...”

There were two deluxe beds in the intensive care ward.

When the two children were pushed out of the emergency room, their dislocated joints were already realigned. Yichen’s condition was worse – he needed a cast to secure his dislocated arm in place.

Their bones did not fracture, yet their bodies inevitably incurred some bruises. Yichen hit his head earlier in the capsule, so he had a minor concussion.

It was not severe; he would recover after resting for a few days.

The doctor patiently informed Yun Shishi of certain dos and don’ts, and she listened to him attentively.

Mu Yichen’s face remained taut throughout the reduction process. Even when the hospital staff was repositioning his arm, never once did his brows wrinkle from the pain; he put up a brave front. (B
oxnovel.c om)

Yun Tianyou, on the other hand, could not resist the pain, so when he saw his brother staying strong, he could only exclaim at his courage.

With him as his role model, despite the pain, Youyou found it too embarrassing to shed a tear. Therefore, he did not wail ceaselessly unlike other children.

The doctors and nurses perceived this scene as fascinating.

Usually, a six-year-old child did not have much tolerance to pain.

If other children were to acquire such injuries, they would explode into tears the moment the hospital staff realigned their arms.

Chapter 458: Two Children Competing for Affection (1)

If other children were to acquire such injuries, they would explode into tears the moment the hospital staff realigned their arms.

Although their injuries were just minor, realigning the joints was still a painful process that could easily scare most children, especially the timid ones.

Surprisingly, the two lads were resilient to pain. It even seemed as if the two were competing with each other as neither of them let out even a whimper.

The doctor heaved a sigh of relief when the two showed tenacity, and he was able to complete the treatment of their wounds smoothly.

Afterward, he could not help but praise the two lads before Yun Shishi. “Your sons are really brave; they didn’t cry even once.”

She felt mixed emotions regarding his remark, not knowing whether to be worried or be delighted by it.

As a mother, when others praised her children as sensible, well-mannered, and mature, besides being relieved, she also felt a little upset.

Once she learned of the severity of Little Yichen’s injuries and the need for him to be confined in hospital, she hurriedly withdrew enough money to pay his hospital bills before she headed off to purchase fruit and desserts.

(vit(function())()

As a child, he probably liked sweet stuff!

Take Youyou as an example; he loved pastries and tiramisu. Thus, she specially paid a visit to a pastry shop and bought two portions of tiramisu. She was meticulous in selecting different flavors of pastries.

Yichen had never had tiramisu before. His eyes literally sparkled after his first bite.

She noted his liking for the tiramisu and gladly fed him a spoonful.

(B oxnovel.c om) A heartfelt smile gradually formed on his originally taut face.

“Is it good?”

She asked as she presented another spoonful of it to him.

Lights danced in merriment in his eyes; he opened his mouth and received it with much gusto.

A warm and fuzzy feeling surfaced in his heart.

Mu Wanrou had never fed him like this before.

The last time his daddy fed him was when he was down with a fever and could not get out of bed. However, his actions were not as gentle as hers and were, in fact, a little rigid. This frequently caused Yichen's lips to get scalded.

“Mhm. It's so sweet! I want some more!” He licked his lips and happily stretched it into a smile.

His eyes were alike Mu Yazhe's, but when he smiled, he looked adorable and lively. His fair and tender face was very lovable.

This child should smile more, for he looked cuter that way!

She was reminded of the first time she had seen him. That time, he was wearing a stern expression. As he turned around indifferently, she observed a terrifying chilliness on his face.

He was entirely similar to that man. When their faces became taut, the father and son looked the same.

A child of six years old, the time when they were most innocent, should smile more.

Yun Shishi became more spirited and continued to feed him, spoonful by spoonful.

A box of tiramisu was then quickly consumed.

Yichen seemed not to have eaten his fill of it yet as his eyes flitted gluttonously between the different pastries. Yun Shishi understood his intentions with one look and laughed. “You can’t eat too many pastries; otherwise, you’ll be on the way to having a toothache.”

“It’s nothing. Let’s have another pastry! I still want some more!”

The thirst was overflowing from his eyes. He was not as skilled as Yun Tianyou at acting coy; this thirst he was displaying now was already his coquettish act toward her.

She could only give in to him as she informed, “This is the last one!”

She then unwrapped the pastry packaging.

He chuckled to himself. He could not hide his feelings, and his delight easily materialized on his face.

She was unaware that he was not actually being gluttonous – he was clearly enjoying the experience of her feeding him with care.

(B oxnovel.c om) Even if it was the pastries he disliked, he would still eat them with relish.

The pastries were small in sizes. However, as she was afraid of him choking on the pastry she was holding, she deliberately broke it into

two smaller pieces and dipped each into a bowl of milk, which she had just poured, before she put them into his mouth.

Chapter 459: Two Children Competing for Affection (2)

The pastries were small in sizes. However, as she was afraid of him choking on the pastry she was holding, she deliberately broke it into two smaller pieces and dipped each into a bowl of milk, which she had just poured, before she put the pastry into his mouth.

Hump... Little Yichen bit the two halves of milky pastry at once. They tasted good!

It might also be because anything tasted good as long as it was fed by her to him.

“Is it yummy?”

“Yummy, yummy!” the boy answered satisfactorily.

The pair of mother and son gave each other a smile filled with warmth.

Youyou lay in his bed, looking sullen. He seemed unhappy.

(vit(function())())

He pouted as he somehow felt that his older brother had robbed him of his privilege!

Why was his mother so busy coaxing his twin she did not even ask about him ?

Suddenly, he felt the slightest bit of regret.

Ultimately, he selfishly wanted his mother all to himself. The thought of giving up half of his full share of motherly love to his older twin was just a little unbearable.

After all, he used to have her love all to himself.

Now, half or even more of his share was being taken away from him; this caused a bit of heartache to him.

Thus, holding his bandaged wrist, he made a few pitiful groans.

His groaning cut through his mother's heart. Realizing that she had neglected the other son, she immediately turned to him and asked anxiously, "Youyou, what is it? Is your wound hurting?"

The younger one shook his head and put on a strong look. "Not painful!"

"It must be painful; mommy heard you just now." She caressed his cheek. "It's been hard on you. Let mommy give you a kiss!"

She leaned over and pecked his little forehead with her lips. His heart was delighted and asked for more with a petulant look. "Why is there only one kiss? Not enough; not enough!"

"Alright; alright. Mommy will give you more!" she coaxed. Holding up his two rosy cheeks, she planted two more kisses.

He pouted satisfactorily. The tears at the side of his eyes had not yet dried when he petulantly asked, “Youyou’s mouth is dry; I want to eat oranges!”

“All right. Mommy will peel an orange for you!” She pinched his nose dotingly, took out an orange, and peeled its skin completely.

After that, she split the orange into halves and then fed it to him slice by slice.

He ate each mouthful with moist eyes, and only after the sweet and sour juices from the orange had filled his oral cavity did his face soften gradually.

Little Yichen watched dolefully from the other bed.

His heart was envious of their mother’s meticulous care for his brother. Green with envy, he linked his dry lip flaps and mimicked his twin’s behavior; he then let out a weak groan...

“Pain... ouch...”

Youyou’s expression turned dull momentarily. “...”

Is this little fella imitating me?

Startled, his mother returned to his older brother’s side, placed her warm loving palm on his cheek, and asked with much concern, “Where are you hurting?”

“Here!” Little Yichen squeezed out two fat drops of pathetic tears and pointed to his dislocated elbow. “It’s so painful!”

“Is it serious ? Maybe the doctor didn’t fix it properly...” She looked panicky and lost.

The boy immediately assured her. “No worries! The doctor did a good job. The pastry will help ease the pain!”

Yun Shishi: “...”

Yun Tianyou: “...”

His twin did not even frown when the doctor fixed his broken elbow in the emergency room earlier, yet he was now acting petulantly pitiful just because their mother had peeled an orange for him ?!

Chapter 460: Two Children Competing for Affection (3)

His twin did not even frown when the doctor fixed his broken elbow in the emergency room earlier, yet he was now acting petulantly pitiful just because their mother had peeled an orange for him ?!

Youyou was vexed now.

The thing was his mother had taken the bait and returned to his twin’s bed to feed him a pastry.

He felt rather unhappy.

This fella is out to snatch my mommy from me, right ?!

How can I let that happen ?!

His eyes flashed with an idea and he reached out his hand for his mother. “Mommy, Youyou wants to go to the toilet!”

(vit(function()){)

Mu Yichen: “...”

Yun Shishi rushed over to his side again, took out a toilet roll from the cabinet, and carried Youyou to the washroom.

As she carried him up to leave the room, he stuck his tongue out and made a face at his older twin, looking victorious.

It was his brother’s turn to be speechless: “...”

Well, he had to consider who he was competing against in the first place. Youyou might be younger, but he could make his mother eat from his hands, so how could he win?

His younger twin might not match up to his physique, but when it came to pitting wits, Little Yichen would definitely lose.

In fact, Youyou started his game again while in the washroom.

“I can’t pee!” he blurted out to her after a while, trying to delay the time.

His mother did not know whether to cry or laugh. “Let mommy help you with your pants!”

“No.”

“Eh?” She was baffled.

After another long pause, he said, “I think I want to poop now.”

Her lips gave a little twitch. “All right! Call mommy when you are done, then!”

His mother wanted to hurry away.

Pouting, he wistfully called out, “Mommy, don’t leave! I won’t have the feel when you are gone.”

She was stumped. “Why do you need the feel when you are shitting?!”

He answered matter-of-factly, “I feel safe that way.”

Yun Shishi: “...”

What does this kid mean?

“If mommy is gone, Youyou will feel listless and afraid...”

He was sufficiently articulate and, but the problem here was that she had not seen him so touchy before.

In the past, he could even go to and from school by himself, let alone the washroom.

Now...

His mother was sensitive enough to pick up the subtle signs from her son after some deliberation. Thus, she bent down and looked calmly into his eyes.

He watched her as well and noticed the strange look on her face with her teasing eyes. Stunned, he asked, “Mommy, what happened to you?”

“Eh, let me guess.” She slowly supposed, “Is my Youyou jealous?”

“...” She hit the nail on the head.

He kept quiet.

His heart was still bothered by it!

His mother saw him bow without a word and knew that she was right. Cupping his little face with her hands, she gave a small peck on his small, pouting lips.

Her warm lips landed a gentle kiss on his.

His face turned hot from embarrassment. “Mommy...”

“Youyou, do you know that he is your older brother?”

“Yes, I know,” he replied slowly, “that he’s my older brother. I know that I have a father and a mother with him.”

She was startled to hear that he knew the truth.

Does he know everything?

That’s unexpected!

Well, this may not come as a surprise. Both kids have seen each other after all, so they should know by now.

Chapter 461: Two Children Competing for Affection (4)

Well, this may not come as a surprise. Both kids have seen each other after all, so they should know by now.

Sometimes, children could be very sensitive and observant.

She caressed his head and patiently coaxed, “Since you already know, you two should get along, right?”

“But...” He frowned as his heart struggled. He knew he was being selfish and even narrow-minded!

He wanted to share her love to his brother at first, but when it was time to do it, he became hesitant and regretful.

When he saw her gentle care for his brother, his mouth tasted a little sourness. This uneasy and stuffy feeling he could not release really made him feel miserable.

Asking him to share his mommy’s love with Mu Yichen was just too much for him!

(vit(function())()

Her heart tugged at his doleful look, and she quickly asked, “But what?”

“But... Youyou loves mommy, and mommy loves Youyou! Doesn’t that Mu Yichen have his daddy already? Isn’t it enough for him to

have his daddy's love? Why must he come and snatch mommy from Youyou?"

"He isn't fighting with you for your mommy."

(Box novel.c om) Panic and uneasiness flashed across his face. He clasped his mother's hands firmly in his palms. "He is out to fight with Youyou. Mommy belongs to Youyou in the first place..."

"Youyou, you must remember; mommy doesn't belong to you."
She patiently corrected him.

His eyes widened slightly and his pupils lost their focus as dense mist clouded his eyes' lower rims. This statement from her was like a sharp blade that pierced through his heart.

Mommy doesn't belong to me?

He felt the sky crashing down on him when he recalled her words a second ago. With his eyes hollowing, he stood there dumbstruck. A crystalline tear rolled down his cheek from his eye.

She furrowed her brows as her heart ached at the pain reflected clearly in his eyes. However, there were just some things that must be told to a child no matter how young he was. "Mommy is not a thing, so I'm not Youyou's property! Still, Youyou should note that mommy really loves you."

Still feeling sad, a muffled scream brokenly escaped from his throat. The wetness of his dense eyelashes made him look even more pitiful!

“But Youyou loves mommy; Youyou hopes mommy’s love only belongs to Youyou and no one else...”

“Youyou, mommy loves you, too, and is the fondest of you. Surely, Youyou can sense that?” She hurried to clarify as she clenched his hands tightly to her chest.

He could feel the warm and strong beating of her heart past the fabric of her clothes.

“Mu Yichen is your older brother. You two are mommy’s flesh and blood – born in the same year, month, and day. Youyou, do you know that when you two were born, your brother was healthy, but you were very sick?”

“Yes. It’s so unfair.”

He retorted with slight envy. His face did not express the wistful thoughts in his mind as he listened to her.

He had been envious of healthy children since he was much younger.

(Box novel.c om) It was painful and torturous to endure sickness every minute and every second of his life.

He seemed to live his entire life confined in the hospital in his younger days.

He opened his eyes to a snow-white world and closed his eyes to a bottomless abyss.

It was a dark time.

Chapter 461: Two Children Competing for Affection (4)

Well, this may not come as a surprise. Both kids have seen each other after all, so they should know by now.

Sometimes, children could be very sensitive and observant.

She caressed his head and patiently coaxed, “Since you already know, you two should get along, right?”

“But...” He frowned as his heart struggled. He knew he was being selfish and even narrow-minded!

He wanted to share her love to his brother at first, but when it was time to do it, he became hesitant and regretful.

When he saw her gentle care for his brother, his mouth tasted a little sourness. This uneasy and stuffy feeling he could not release really made him feel miserable.

Asking him to share his mommy’s love with Mu Yichen was just too much for him!

(vit(function())()

Her heart tugged at his doleful look, and she quickly asked, “But what?”

“But... Youyou loves mommy, and mommy loves Youyou! Doesn’t that Mu Yichen have his daddy already? Isn’t it enough for him to

have his daddy's love? Why must he come and snatch mommy from Youyou?"

"He isn't fighting with you for your mommy."

(Box novel.c om) Panic and uneasiness flashed across his face. He clasped his mother's hands firmly in his palms. "He is out to fight with Youyou. Mommy belongs to Youyou in the first place..."

"Youyou, you must remember; mommy doesn't belong to you." She patiently corrected him.

His eyes widened slightly and his pupils lost their focus as dense mist clouded his eyes' lower rims. This statement from her was like a sharp blade that pierced through his heart.

Mommy doesn't belong to me?

He felt the sky crashing down on him when he recalled her words a second ago. With his eyes hollowing, he stood there dumbstruck. A crystalline tear rolled down his cheek from his eye.

She furrowed her brows as her heart ached at the pain reflected clearly in his eyes. However, there were just some things that must be told to a child no matter how young he was. "Mommy is not a thing, so I'm not Youyou's property! Still, Youyou should note that mommy really loves you."

Still feeling sad, a muffled scream brokenly escaped from his throat. The wetness of his dense eyelashes made him look even more pitiful!

“But Youyou loves mommy; Youyou hopes mommy’s love only belongs to Youyou and no one else...”

“Youyou, mommy loves you, too, and is the fondest of you. Surely, Youyou can sense that?” She hurried to clarify as she clenched his hands tightly to her chest.

He could feel the warm and strong beating of her heart past the fabric of her clothes.

“Mu Yichen is your older brother. You two are mommy’s flesh and blood – born in the same year, month, and day. Youyou, do you know that when you two were born, your brother was healthy, but you were very sick?”

“Yes. It’s so unfair.”

He retorted with slight envy. His face did not express the wistful thoughts in his mind as he listened to her.

He had been envious of healthy children since he was much younger.

(Box novel.c om) It was painful and torturous to endure sickness every minute and every second of his life.

He seemed to live his entire life confined in the hospital in his younger days.

He opened his eyes to a snow-white world and closed his eyes to a bottomless abyss.

It was a dark time.

Chapter 462: Two Children Competing for Affection (5)

He opened his eyes to a snow-white world and closed his eyes to a bottomless abyss.

It was a dark time. He hated the antiseptic smile that accompanied him at all times.

Back then, he could only observe the sunlight from the window of his ward. He had a faint memory of a patch of grass just outside the hospital from a place he could see.

Many children visiting their kin at the hospital ran and played on that grass lawn. They either chased one another or frolicked with helium balloons in their hands.

One of the balloons slipped loose from a hand and floated high above the sky.

Propping his head in his palms, he stared dully at the floating balloon as it vanished into the horizon.

This was one of those rare moments of fun.

(vit(function())())

His mother saw his face turning white and knew that he was recalling bad memories.

Youyou knew that his health was poor, yet he still wanted to play with other kids, but the doctor was stern on his stance that he was not to run around or do anything strenuous, for it might trigger a shortage

of blood supply to the heart, which would then lead to dyspnea or even shock in serious cases.

Hence, his mother seldom let him out to have fun with other children. She would, oftentimes, just play some puzzle games with him.

His health got better under her tender and loving care and attention.

She smiled slightly. “Youyou, you mustn’t think like this. Mommy and Yichen have separated for six years; you, in contrast, have enjoyed the love that is meant for you two all this while.”

“Oh...” He appeared flabbergasted.

Is that so?

It was him who had robbed Mu Yichen of his rightful share?

She continued to speak. “Today, you told me that your brother had saved you.”

He nodded dully. Indeed, Mu Yichen had saved him.

If it had not been for his interference, the consequence would have been unthinkable.

Deep down, he knew that that killer was after him!

He had mulled over this fishy matter on their way to the hospital.

He did tell his mother that he wanted to nap, but when he closed his eyes, this matter would occupy his mind.

There were just too many questionable issues.

Of course, she did not know what was on his mind as she continued.

“Mommy also finds it incredible! Your brother is great to save my Youyou; mommy is so grateful to him. Aren’t you grateful, too?”

He came around and hastily replied, “Of course, I’m grateful for him saving me. I’ll do anything for him in return!”

“Youyou is such a sensible boy.” Relieved, she laid a kiss on his forehead between his brows.

He awkwardly refused, “But I’m unable to share my mommy’s love to him.”

“Mommy loves Youyou!”

His mother reiterated this fact to him.

Hearing that, he nodded with a pout. “Yes, mommy loves Youyou, and Youyou can feel it!”

“Mommy loves you, as well as your brother, but that doesn’t mean that you’ll lose mommy. You have the love of your brother, too, haven’t you?”

Stunned, he became pensive.

He pored over his mother’s words and caught her meaning fast!

He was undoubtedly a smart kid and easily got what she was driving at.

In that case, he would not make things difficult for her, but he still needed time to accept Yichen as a family!

He came out of the washroom and quietly returned to his bed.

She followed him from behind. As she watched him climb into the bed, tidy the quilt, and cover himself neatly, she could not help sighing in resignation.

Chapter 463: That Killer's Motive

She followed him from behind. As she watched him climb into the bed, tidy the quilt, and cover himself neatly, she could not help sighing in resignation.

She knew that he had straightened out his thoughts, but he needed more time to accept everything.

Indeed, it was harsh to force him into accepting the fact he had to share her love with another child.

Youyou was all along sensible and obedient, and with this knowledge, she sat by the bed and asked tenderly, "Youyou, do you want some warm water?"

"Mm. I want." He pursed his lips.

She hummed in response and lifted the hot water flask at the side. Before she left the room, she specifically requested, "Yichen, do help me take care of Youyou!"

Mu Yichen stole a glance at Yun Tianyou and obediently nodded at her.

(vit(function()){

She then went out.

Just as the doors clicked shut, Youyou sat up from bed. Yichen was taken aback by this, but once he caught sight of his dark expression, he hurriedly asked, “What’s the matter?”

“It’s strange.” (Box novel.c om)

“What do you mean?” His statement baffled him, and he could not grasp what he was trying to imply.

Youyou’s eyes deepened and turned frosty. Facing his twin, he asked, “When did you discover that man?”

“Erm... You mean that man who tried to off us?” Yichen raised his brow in question. Realizing that he was indeed talking about that killer, he replied at once, “After we entered the haunted house.”

“Didn’t he see you?”

“He did!”

“Why did you say that I was his target, then?”

This was too suspicious.

Being together in the haunted house, with his physical appearance resembling Yichen’s, especially since that man had followed them

inside a place with dim lightings, he should have come across Yichen first.

Youyou remembered Yichen carrying a toy panda earlier while he had nothing in his hands. If this man's target was Yichen, he should be able to differentiate them from their clothes.

Could it be that he was not only targeting him?

With innumerable twists and turns in his mind, Youyou considered numerous different possibilities but dropped them one by one.

Yichen was clueless on what he was thinking of and simply explained with a solemn look, "That's because his target was clear from the start. I don't know when that man started following you two, but, at least, before we entered the haunted house, he's already on your heels! Back then, the toy panda made me noticeable, so when I went in and sensed that someone was following me, I threw it on the ground. However, he didn't even look at it, which meant that he wasn't after me."

"Then, he..." Halfway through his speech, Youyou's orbs shrank and his voice turned eerily cold. "I got it."

"Hm? 'Got' what?" Yichen's curiosity was piqued.

"That man's target, perhaps, wasn't just me." He suddenly felt cold. For all he knew, the man was targeting him and his mother!

Luckily, his mommy was separated from them inside the haunted house. Since he was the man's main target, he would obviously strive to eliminate him first!

He could not help feeling mortified as he continued to ponder on this matter.

His phone rang without warning.

He held up the phone and upon noticing that the caller was Li Hanlin, he promptly answered, "Hello."

"Mr. Yun, are you in the hospital?"

Yun Tianyou immediately climbed off his bed and made his way to the window when he heard his cautious voice.

Chapter 464: His Wicked Nature Showing

Yun Tianyou immediately climbed off his bed and made his way to the window when he heard his cautious voice. He then marginally lowered his volume. "Mm. I'm in the hospital."

"How's your injury? Is it bad?" His concern was evident from his nervous tone. "My apologies for not making it to the hospital right away."

"It's fine. I'm not seriously hurt." Pausing, Yun Tianyou changed the topic. "How's that matter progressing?"

"Mm! We caught the man, but according to CCTV, he appears to have an accomplice. The other is still at large!" His voice grew softer with every word he spouted as he was afraid that the boy would reprimand him for not doing his work well.

Youyou's voice was suddenly harsh. "How do you do things!"

The agent's tears welled up as he held the phone. He knew he would say that!

However, he had truly done his best in this matter.

(vit(function())()

"Where is he?" The lad calmed himself down.

He had no plan of handing over the man they had caught to the authorities. He planned to force everything out from his mouth. (Box novel.c om)

Li Hanlin immediately answered him with utmost respect. "He is currently being detained in a warehouse on the city outskirts. He's under heavy surveillance. So far, he's remained tight-lipped about anything."

"Oh?" His brows knitted together as his lips curved chillingly. "He wouldn't say anything?!"

"Mm! I made the preparations to ensure his safety."

The little boy praised, "Mm. Good job. A pay raise for you this month."

What a rare bestowment.

Li Hanlin instantly burst into tears of gratefulness. "Thank you, Mr. Yun. You've finally raised my pay. My family will be over the moon!"

Yun Tianyou creased his brows in slight disgust. He cast his eyes outside and blanked out for a moment. He then suddenly came to a decision. “He wouldn’t say anything, right?”

“Yes. We tried everything on him, but the man remained tight-lipped, refusing to say anything. We even found a poison sac in his mouth.”

“Poison sac?” His brows’ furrow deepened. “What’s that?”

“Mr. Yun, the man is a professional killer; by biting that poison sac, he can commit suicide and avoid information getting extracted from him through torture!” the agent explained.

He felt a chill run down his spine. That was too vicious and calculative.

After a while, he ordered, “Pick me up tonight; I’ll question him myself.”

“Mr. Yun, that doesn’t seem to be a good idea!” he exclaimed in disbelief.

“Just follow what I say and don’t ask questions,” he stated before hanging up the phone.

Turning around, he saw Mu Yichen leaning on the bed. He was quite far from him and could not possibly hear the content of the two’s phone conversation.

(Box novel.c om) However, he keenly sensed his complete change in aura the moment he picked up the phone.

He was indifferent and stern and had a penetrating spirit.

Getting off his bed and coming up to his twin, Yichen caught a glimpse of his eyes. They were extremely cold and distant.

He displayed a vastly different demeanor from the innocent and sweet vibe he gave off before Yun Shishi.

He had witnessed his calmness earlier. When the Ferris wheel suddenly stopped, if it were other children, they would surely wail aloud in panic.

He did not do that, however. He simply dialed a number and calmly remained seated thereafter.

Even when he was hanging outside the capsule, although he did get a little flustered, he was able to calm himself quickly.

In any case, this was his first time seeing such a terrifying look on a child.

Youyou glanced over at his brother. He hesitated on whether he should share everything to his brother or keep it all to himself.

Being conflicted for a moment, he eventually decided to hide it from him.

He would settle this matter once and for all; there was no need to involve others.

He went to lie in his bed again. What he did not notice was that there was a slight change in the way Mu Yichen looked at him.

Chapter 465: This Child Simply Loves Clinging to You

Prior to Mu Yazhe and Song Enya's entrance to the room, the Song family arrived in quick succession.

Song Enxi was the Songs' most beloved treasure – a princess treated by them with utmost care. When they heard that she got hurt, Song Yunxi and Jiang Qimeng came hurrying over.

Song Enxi continued to wail scandalously in her ward. Noticing the arrival of her older brother and mother, her skill at acting coy became all the more apparent. She repeatedly threw a tantrum while in the arms of Jiang Qimeng; her face was already tear-stained and her eyes were even puffy.

It pained her to see the back of her daughter's head shaved off. Although her wounds were stitched up, they still appeared to be oozing with blood. Stricken with grief, her eyes were moistened.

Song Yunxi continued to comfort his sister from the side.

He loved his youngest sibling from the bottom of his heart. He had pampered and loved her to the best of his abilities from the moment she was born.

However, as he was usually busy with work, he could not pay attention to her all the time. Thus, the lass did not appreciate his efforts to comfort her.

(vit(function())())

Jiang Qimeng crooned at her as well, but just like with her brother, Song Enxi was not buying it.

They were truly at their wits' end.

Noticing Mu Yazhe's arrival, Song Enxi wanted to escape from Jiang Qimeng's clutches immediately. She spread her arms at him and acted coy. "Uncle Mu, hugs. Uncle Mu, hugs!"

Jiang Qimeng obviously resented him somewhat, but the Mus and the Songs were rather chummy; the two families had good rapport which had spanned for over ten decades. Thus, no matter how much she resented him inside, she still maintained a modest look on the outside. She should not make the situation too intolerable; otherwise, both sides would be embarrassed. They ought to leave each other some face, at least.

Hence, she spoke politely, "Yazhe, you are here?"

"Mm, sis!" he greeted in return.

Song Yunxi greeted him a little unnaturally and hesitantly. "Uncle... Mu!"

"Mm." he replied, seemingly unaware of his nephew's discomfort.

The two men were only four years apart with Mu Yazhe having a higher seniority to Song Yunxi. Calling the former 'Uncle Mu' was truly a little awkward for the latter with his pride.

As soon as her mother's attention was off her, Song Enxi jumped off her arms at once and snuggled herself into her uncle's embrace.

Mu Yazhe was helpless at her actions and was forced to carry her up. At present, he had conflicting feelings regarding her.

He was more concerned about Yichen.

He kept waiting for his son's call, yet after such a long time, he still received none from him. Was the little boy still mad at him?

While his thoughts were in a mess, the little girl, feeling a little disgruntled, grubbed deeper into his embrace. Clearly, she felt indignant and wanted him to comfort her.

However, as of now, he was not in the mood to deal with this lass's petulance.

She stared at his side-profile decadently. Indignation was written all over her face.

Jiang Qimeng appeared to be in somewhat of a discomfiture as she forced out a smile. "Just look at this girl! She's already hurt, yet she's still naughty. However, for some reason, she seems to love clinging to you!"

He stroked her head but said nothing in response.

Song Enya chimed in, "Exactly. Enxi loves Uncle Mu the most; am I right?"

The little girl immediately cheered. "Yup, yup! Enxi loves Uncle Mu the most! Enxi loves Uncle Mu the most!"

She proceeded to lean her head lovingly on the man's chest.

The corner of his lips started to hang coldly. As his mind was elsewhere from the start, it should be expected for the situation to turn a little awkward now!

Chapter 465: This Child Simply Loves Clinging to You

Prior to Mu Yazhe and Song Enya's entrance to the room, the Song family arrived in quick succession.

Song Enxi was the Songs' most beloved treasure – a princess treated by them with utmost care. When they heard that she got hurt, Song Yunxi and Jiang Qimeng came hurrying over.

Song Enxi continued to wail scandalously in her ward. Noticing the arrival of her older brother and mother, her skill at acting coy became all the more apparent. She repeatedly threw a tantrum while in the arms of Jiang Qimeng; her face was already tear-stained and her eyes were even puffy.

It pained her to see the back of her daughter's head shaved off. Although her wounds were stitched up, they still appeared to be oozing with blood. Stricken with grief, her eyes were moistened.

Song Yunxi continued to comfort his sister from the side.

He loved his youngest sibling from the bottom of his heart. He had pampered and loved her to the best of his abilities from the moment she was born.

However, as he was usually busy with work, he could not pay attention to her all the time. Thus, the lass did not appreciate his efforts to comfort her.

(vit(function()){)

Jiang Qimeng crooned at her as well, but just like with her brother, Song Enxi was not buying it.

They were truly at their wits' end.

Noticing Mu Yazhe's arrival, Song Enxi wanted to escape from Jiang Qimeng's clutches immediately. She spread her arms at him and acted coy. "Uncle Mu, hugs. Uncle Mu, hugs!"

Jiang Qimeng obviously resented him somewhat, but the Mus and the Songs were rather chummy; the two families had good rapport which had spanned for over ten decades. Thus, no matter how much she resented him inside, she still maintained a modest look on the outside. She should not make the situation too intolerable; otherwise, both sides would be embarrassed. They ought to leave each other some face, at least.

Hence, she spoke politely, "Yazhe, you are here?"

"Mm, sis!" he greeted in return.

Song Yunxi greeted him a little unnaturally and hesitantly. "Uncle... Mu!"

"Mm." he replied, seemingly unaware of his nephew's discomfort.

The two men were only four years apart with Mu Yazhe having a higher seniority to Song Yunxi. Calling the former 'Uncle Mu' was truly a little awkward for the latter with his pride.

As soon as her mother's attention was off her, Song Enxi jumped off her arms at once and snuggled herself into her uncle's embrace.

Mu Yazhe was helpless at her actions and was forced to carry her up. At present, he had conflicting feelings regarding her.

He was more concerned about Yichen.

He kept waiting for his son's call, yet after such a long time, he still received none from him. Was the little boy still mad at him?

While his thoughts were in a mess, the little girl, feeling a little disgruntled, grubbed deeper into his embrace. Clearly, she felt indignant and wanted him to comfort her.

However, as of now, he was not in the mood to deal with this lass's petulance.

She stared at his side-profile decadently. Indignation was written all over her face.

Jiang Qimeng appeared to be in somewhat of a discomfiture as she forced out a smile. "Just look at this girl! She's already hurt, yet she's still naughty. However, for some reason, she seems to love clinging to you!"

He stroked her head but said nothing in response.

Song Enya chimed in, “Exactly. Enxi loves Uncle Mu the most; am I right?”

The little girl immediately cheered. “Yup, yup! Enxi loves Uncle Mu the most! Enxi loves Uncle Mu the most!”

She proceeded to lean her head lovingly on the man’s chest.

The corner of his lips started to hang coldly. As his mind was elsewhere from the start, it should be expected for the situation to turn a little awkward now!

Chapter 465: This Child Simply Loves Clinging to You

Prior to Mu Yazhe and Song Enya’s entrance to the room, the Song family arrived in quick succession.

Song Enxi was the Songs’ most beloved treasure – a princess treated by them with utmost care. When they heard that she got hurt, Song Yunxi and Jiang Qimeng came hurrying over.

Song Enxi continued to wail scandalously in her ward. Noticing the arrival of her older brother and mother, her skill at acting coy became all the more apparent. She repeatedly threw a tantrum while in the arms of Jiang Qimeng; her face was already tear-stained and her eyes were even puffy.

It pained her to see the back of her daughter’s head shaved off. Although her wounds were stitched up, they still appeared to be oozing with blood. Stricken with grief, her eyes were moistened.

Song Yunxi continued to comfort his sister from the side.

He loved his youngest sibling from the bottom of his heart. He had pampered and loved her to the best of his abilities from the moment she was born.

However, as he was usually busy with work, he could not pay attention to her all the time. Thus, the lass did not appreciate his efforts to comfort her.

(vit(function()){

Jiang Qimeng crooned at her as well, but just like with her brother, Song Enxi was not buying it.

They were truly at their wits' end.

Noticing Mu Yazhe's arrival, Song Enxi wanted to escape from Jiang Qimeng's clutches immediately. She spread her arms at him and acted coy. "Uncle Mu, hugs. Uncle Mu, hugs!"

Jiang Qimeng obviously resented him somewhat, but the Mus and the Songs were rather chummy; the two families had good rapport which had spanned for over ten decades. Thus, no matter how much she resented him inside, she still maintained a modest look on the outside. She should not make the situation too intolerable; otherwise, both sides would be embarrassed. They ought to leave each other some face, at least.

Hence, she spoke politely, "Yazhe, you are here?"

"Mm, sis!" he greeted in return.

Song Yunxi greeted him a little unnaturally and hesitantly. “Uncle... Mu!”

“Mm.” he replied, seemingly unaware of his nephew’s discomfort.

The two men were only four years apart with Mu Yazhe having a higher seniority to Song Yunxi. Calling the former ‘Uncle Mu’ was truly a little awkward for the latter with his pride.

As soon as her mother’s attention was off her, Song Enxi jumped off her arms at once and snuggled herself into her uncle’s embrace.

Mu Yazhe was helpless at her actions and was forced to carry her up. At present, he had conflicting feelings regarding her.

He was more concerned about Yichen.

He kept waiting for his son’s call, yet after such a long time, he still received none from him. Was the little boy still mad at him?

While his thoughts were in a mess, the little girl, feeling a little disgruntled, grubbed deeper into his embrace. Clearly, she felt indignant and wanted him to comfort her.

However, as of now, he was not in the mood to deal with this lass’s petulance.

She stared at his side-profile decadently. Indignation was written all over her face.

Jiang Qimeng appeared to be in somewhat of a discomfiture as she forced out a smile. “Just look at this girl! She’s already hurt, yet

she's still naughty. However, for some reason, she seems to love clinging to you!"

He stroked her head but said nothing in response.

Song Enya chimed in, "Exactly. Enxi loves Uncle Mu the most; am I right?"

The little girl immediately cheered. "Yup, yup! Enxi loves Uncle Mu the most! Enxi loves Uncle Mu the most!"

She proceeded to lean her head lovingly on the man's chest.

The corner of his lips started to hang coldly. As his mind was elsewhere from the start, it should be expected for the situation to turn a little awkward now!

Chapter 466: End of Punishment

The corner of his lips started to hang coldly. As his mind was elsewhere from the start, it should

be expected for the situation to turn a little awkward now!

Song Enya felt extremely awkward as well; when she recalled those words she should not have spoken to the man, she was, for a moment, at a loss on how to smoothen things out.

Meanwhile, Jiang Qimeng chuckled dryly twice, but deep down, she was utterly displeased.

Today was Children's Day; thus, she permitted Song Enya to bring Song Enxi to the theme park for a day of fun. The two left the house in one piece, yet her next meeting with her youngest daughter was at this hospital due to a head injury. (Box novel.c om)

She was roughly informed of what had happened by Song Enya. The latter had not made herself clear over the phone, however, and had merely put all the blame on to Yichen.

The truth ? Her eldest daughter was partly to blame.

(vit(function())())

Since she was the one who had brought Song Enxi out, while the little girl was outside, she should have faithfully fulfilled her duty as her guardian. Was she not, therefore, liable for the child getting hurt ?

Back when Mu Yazhe had expressed his desire to visit the nearest desserts shop, she should have stayed behind to look after the two children. However, due to her harboring a selfish desire to monopolize the man's attention, she followed him and left the two, a five-year-old and a six-year-old, to their devices instead.

Then, when something happened, she simply pushed all the responsibility to Yichen.

This might be a common fault among rich young missies; perhaps, having been spoiled by her family from a young age, she mistakenly thought that she could do no wrong and therefore had no sense of responsibility.

On second thought, if she had remained to take care of the two kids, would such an incident have happened?

Earlier, while speaking to Jiang Qimeng, she had failed to mention about Song Enxi biting Little Yichen and only detailed about the former being pushed by the latter.

Recalling her statement at once, which she had quoted out of context, her mother would naturally perceive that this entire incident was the boy's willful doing – him pushing the little girl away out of playfulness.

Thus, Jiang Qimeng was, more or less, annoyed at him as Mu Yazhe sat down with an unsmiling and absent-minded face!

Her child had three stitches to close a wound on her nape and because of that, her hair was partially shaved off. It was unknown if it would grow back in the future.

Her daughter had not suffered this much injustice before.

As Yichen's father, it was only right for Mu Yazhe to shoulder some of the blame in this matter; one who was accountable should not be showing apathy on his face!

However, as unhappy as she was, she dared not say anything.

(Box novel.c om) The Songs were indubitably distinguished within the capital. Capitalizing on Old Song's fame, their family remained in power with undiminished influence. Nonetheless, it was far from being on par with the Mu family and its businesses. The latter was simply a giant in every field it dabbled into; simply put, the Mus held absolute law in the capital!

Thus, no matter what, the Songs had to be subservient to the Mus.

Despite this, Jiang Qimeng did not feel good at all. Hence, she glanced menacingly at Song Enxi as she ordered, “Your Uncle Mu is tired. Get off him now! You child, why do you always like to cling on to others?”

The little girl snorted. “I don’t wanna! I just like Uncle Mu!”

“Have you not suffered enough?!” Starting to get a little impatient, she flared up. “You are really too willful!”

“Wuu... wuuu... Mama is yelling at me...” The little girl’s small face creased as drops of agonizing tears fell down.

“Mom, Enxi likes Brother Mu, so just let her be!” Song Enya said at the side.

Suddenly, the little girl was put down by Mu Yazhe as he stood up. He was, after all, still concerned about his son. Since it was getting late, Fairy Tale Valley should be closing soon!

His son’s punishment should stop now!

Chapter 466: End of Punishment

The corner of his lips started to hang coldly. As his mind was elsewhere from the start, it should

be expected for the situation to turn a little awkward now!

Song Enya felt extremely awkward as well; when she recalled those words she should not have spoken to the man, she was, for a moment, at a loss on how to smoothen things out.

Meanwhile, Jiang Qimeng chuckled dryly twice, but deep down, she was utterly displeased.

Today was Children's Day; thus, she permitted Song Enya to bring Song Enxi to the theme park for a day of fun. The two left the house in one piece, yet her next meeting with her youngest daughter was at this hospital due to a head injury. (Box novel.c om)

She was roughly informed of what had happened by Song Enya. The latter had not made herself clear over the phone, however, and had merely put all the blame on to Yichen.

The truth? Her eldest daughter was partly to blame.

(vit(function())()

Since she was the one who had brought Song Enxi out, while the little girl was outside, she should have faithfully fulfilled her duty as her guardian. Was she not, therefore, liable for the child getting hurt?

Back when Mu Yazhe had expressed his desire to visit the nearest desserts shop, she should have stayed behind to look after the two children. However, due to her harboring a selfish desire to monopolize the man's attention, she followed him and left the two, a five-year-old and a six-year-old, to their devices instead.

Then, when something happened, she simply pushed all the responsibility to Yichen.

This might be a common fault among rich young missies; perhaps, having been spoiled by her family from a young age, she mistakenly thought that she could do no wrong and therefore had no sense of responsibility.

On second thought, if she had remained to take care of the two kids, would such an incident have happened?

Earlier, while speaking to Jiang Qimeng, she had failed to mention about Song Enxi biting Little Yichen and only detailed about the former being pushed by the latter.

Recalling her statement at once, which she had quoted out of context, her mother would naturally perceive that this entire incident was the boy's willful doing – him pushing the little girl away out of playfulness.

Thus, Jiang Qimeng was, more or less, annoyed at him as Mu Yazhe sat down with an unsmiling and absent-minded face!

Her child had three stitches to close a wound on her nape and because of that, her hair was partially shaved off. It was unknown if it would grow back in the future.

Her daughter had not suffered this much injustice before.

As Yichen's father, it was only right for Mu Yazhe to shoulder some of the blame in this matter; one who was accountable should not be showing apathy on his face!

However, as unhappy as she was, she dared not say anything.

(Box novel.c om) The Songs were indubitably distinguished within the capital. Capitalizing on Old Song's fame, their family remained in power with undiminished influence. Nonetheless, it was far from being on par with the Mu family and its businesses. The latter was simply a giant in every field it dabbled into; simply put, the Mus held absolute law in the capital!

Thus, no matter what, the Songs had to be subservient to the Mus.

Despite this, Jiang Qimeng did not feel good at all. Hence, she glanced menacingly at Song Enxi as she ordered, "Your Uncle Mu is tired. Get off him now! You child, why do you always like to cling on to others?"

The little girl snorted. "I don't wanna! I just like Uncle Mu!"

"Have you not suffered enough?!" Starting to get a little impatient, she flared up. "You are really too willful!"

"Wuu... wuu... Mama is yelling at me..." The little girl's small face creased as drops of agonizing tears fell down.

"Mom, Enxi likes Brother Mu, so just let her be!" Song Enya said at the side.

Suddenly, the little girl was put down by Mu Yazhe as he stood up. He was, after all, still concerned about his son. Since it was getting late, Fairy Tale Valley should be closing soon!

His son's punishment should stop now!

Chapter 467: I Bit Him First

His son's punishment should stop now!

Even if Yichen had not called to apologize earnestly, he had already lost his patience.

Realizing that he was about to leave, Song Enya quickly went forward and asked, "Brother Mu, where are you going?"

"To fetch my child!" He curtly replied.

Jiang Qimeng lifted Song Enxi up and spoke precipitously, "Yazhe, there's something that I, as a sister, should advise you about. Don't spoil your boy every time. He must develop a sense of responsibility at this age! Take Yunxi as an example; he was mischievous when he was much younger and constantly landed himself in trouble, but I told him then, that as a man, he must be accountable for his actions and be liable for his wrongdoings! The Songs, as usual, will not pursue this matter, but I hope that you can ask Yichen to apologize to my daughter..."

Mu Yazhe's back stiffened, and immediately, a spirit of ferocity radiated off him.

He slowly turned to face them with a more unperturbed look.

(vit(function())())

"It's my family's business as to how I discipline my son; the Songs have no right to intervene!"

She took on a ghastly expression upon hearing that.

Her son could not bear it further and expressed his displeasure.

“Uncle Mu, what do you mean by that? Even after this has happened, the Songs have given the Mu family their due respect. Now, we just wish for Yichen to apologize—”

“Sure.” He cut his words short impudently.

Song Yunxi was startled.

A smile of relief then spread on Jiang Qimeng’s face.

“Can Yichen request for Enxi to apologize for biting him too?”

Her smile instantly froze.

“What do you mean?”

“What do I mean? You should ask your daughter.” He uttered this before he left the ward.

The crowd he had left behind had a look of consternation.

Song Enya stood before Song Enxi and confronted, “What exactly happened today?!”

The little girl raised her head and stared at her with moist eyes. The person whom she was most frightened of in the family was probably none other than this sister of hers. She knew that she had done something wrong and, more importantly, she had made Uncle Mu angry because of it!

While she was feeling indignant, she was feeling somewhat regretful as well!

Flustered, Song Enya bellowed, “Say something! What in the world is going on?! Why did Yichen push you?!”

The little girl burst into tears from her reprimand.

Song Yunxi was pained upon seeing his sister wail and went to her right away. “She’s still young; don’t scold her like that!”

“Yunxi, you always spoil her! Look at her and at how willful she’s become!” She glared at him before lowering her head to look at her little sister threateningly. “If you’re not well-behaved, Uncle Mu won’t like you anymore!”

“Wuuu! It’s all because of Yichen! He didn’t let me look at his watch and fought over Uncle Mu with me! Wuuu... He even said that I’m a monster, so I bit him once in anger! Just once... uuu...”

She whined and sobbed as she recounted the incident from start to finish.

It turned out that the little boy had truly not exerted much force when pushing her. She was simply being deliberate, making it seem as if he had pushed her hard, so that she could complain about it to Mu Yazhe when the time came.

However, she did not expect to fall down a flight of stairs and disastrously hit the back of her head.

At this instant, Jiang Qimeng had turned white with rage. She lifted her small hand up and landed a strike on her palm. “Why didn’t you tell mommy earlier?!”

“I’m scared of mommy scolding me! Wuuu...”

A phone rang without warning.

Song Enya looked in the direction of the ringtone. It was Mu Yazhe’s phone; it had slid out of his pocket while he was sitting on the sofa.

Chapter 468: His Love Is Not for Her

Song Enya looked in the direction of the ringtone. It was Mu Yazhe’s phone; it had slid out of his pocket while he was sitting on the sofa.

She picked it up and wanted to ignore the call at first, but then, she saw the picture of a woman’s sleeping face on the caller ID.

The woman in the picture was otherworldly beautiful. Although she was sleeping with a bare face, she still looked absolutely gorgeous.

Her hair lay scattered across the side of the pillow and on her snowy white skin. It was in a mess, yet it did not diminish her beauty.

Only the word ‘Shi’ was displayed on her caller ID.

This was the man’s phone; she had no right to pick up the call.

However, when she looked at the caller ID's picture, her thoughts started to run wild, and without realizing it, she had already accepted the call.

(vit(function()){)

...

Yun Shishi inquired about the location of the water dispensary at the nurse station. The nurse on duty was busy and simply replied to her without much care; thus, after many twists and turns, she still did not manage to locate the room.

She was about to return to the ward when a thought came to her. Should she ring Mu Yazhe about Yichen's need to be hospitalized?

She was previously occupied with sending the children to the hospital, nervously waiting outside the emergency room, and then fussing over the two kids' needs.

Now, she remembered that she had yet to inform the man about Yichen's situation. If there was a misunderstanding between the father and son, they should talk about it to clear things up right away.

Hence, she retrieved her phone and dialed his number.

The phone rang for a while before the call went through. The probing voice of a female was heard over the phone instead. "Who are you?"

Yun Shishi was momentarily dazed.

The woman on the other end was clearly piqued by her silence.

“Speak!”

“Hello. Is... Mu Yazhe there?”

The woman hissed, “No!” before hanging up.

Yun Shishi was stunned for a while. She snickered to herself, yet her heart ached intensely.

She thought that he was surely busy or that he was still disciplining his son, and that he surely cared for him, but...

She originally wanted to inform him of Yichen being confined in this hospital and bid him to come over.

Little did she expect that a woman would answer the call in his stead. What was the meaning of this?

She was a little peeved and heartbroken for Yichen!

She regarded him as a responsible father at first; now, she had to question this notion of hers.

If he's not coming, then forget it!

No matter who he was with, it had nothing to do with her!

She would look after his son if he did not care for him. She was absolutely willing to do so, anyway.

Was he in any way related to her?

As she thought of that, before she knew it, she was already waiting for the elevator to bring her back to the kids.

The elevator came up slowly. The ward where the kids were in was located high up the building, so it took a while for the elevator to reach her floor.

All of a sudden, a gasping voice rang out from behind her. “Brother Mu!”

She knitted her brows and turned to look.

When she thought about this later, she would tell herself that she should not have looked behind her at this time. A series of events would not have been triggered if she had not witnessed this scene! However, this was a story for another day.

She spun around and caught sight of Mu Yazhe walking down the stairs with a woman chasing after him while looking flustered.

He originally did not seem to bother about her as he went down the stairs without glancing backward.

“You left your phone with me; don’t you want it back?!” It was only when she shouted this that he halted his footsteps. Pivoting, he saw Song Enya catching up to him with a smile.

When she noticed his presence, Yun Shishi moved to approach him, but the woman’s next words stopped her from doing so.

The man’s phone was with that woman?

Was she that woman who had spoken snidely at her over the phone moments before?

Her feet were momentarily glued to the ground.

Chapter 469: Brother Mu, don't be angry with me.

Her feet were momentarily glued to the ground.

As she watched, the woman smilingly walked to the man and stood before him. The naïve smile on her face strongly reminded him of his mother in her younger days.

He was lost in the flashbacks and did not respond to her immediately.

Song Enya took out his mobile phone, but when he reached out for it, she playfully made a face and hid it behind her. This was how she used to joke with him in their childhood.

“Brother Mu, please don't be mad at me!”

He looked stunned and then kept quiet. The anger inside him subsided a little with her smiling face that reminded him so much of his mother!

She knew that his icy look marked his anger; hence, she reached out her hands to cling on to his shoulders in petulance. “Brother Mu, I'm really sorry! I made those thoughtless remarks earlier. There were indeed some misunderstandings at the theme park, so my

previous comments were uncalled for. I don't mean any harm. Can you forgive me? Please?"

(vit(function()){)

She coyly purred to his face.

The man had indulged her since young. Sometimes, when she went overboard and ended up upsetting him, she would coax him in a similar manner. This tactic had yet to fail her.

Indeed, his expression softened much after her words.

“Eh.”

“Are you really not mad anymore?” She squealed in delight and raised her eyes to doublecheck his face.

She was in jubilation when she saw that his frosty look had softened somewhat; this meant that his anger had abated a little.

“Thank you, Brother Mu! Please apologize for us to Little Yichen! Since I didn't do my job as his older sister, I owe him an apology. Please tell him that I'll bring Enxi to apologize to him personally next time!”

“Go on.” He did not express anything and just ruffled her hair with his hand, hinting for her to return to her sister's side.

She nodded, gave him back his mobile phone, and unwillingly parted with him.

With his mobile phone in hand, he was about to walk away when a familiar figure entered his line of sight. Startled, he looked in a certain direction and saw Yun Shishi standing at the elevator with her piercing eyes on him.

Her face held a spine-chilling look.

She eyed him coldly in shock. Her eyes were hollow and dead, as if her heart had passed out from distraught.

She did not know why it pained her so much to see his look of loving indulgence, which had flashed unknowingly across his face, when the woman hugged him.

If she did not witness this personally, she would never know that this man could have such a tender side to him!

Could he reveal such indulgence for a woman?

When the woman flung herself at him, he did not reject her advances. What was even worse was that he had actually displayed a look of tenderness on his face. This hurt her undoubtedly!

She did not care who this woman was or what her status was!

She also did not care for the relationship between them and his appearance at this hospital's staircase with a stranger instead of at his son's bed.

She was only concerned about how much Little Yichen meant to him and what her status was in his heart!

Chapter 470: Do you not know that Little Yichen was in danger?

Was his gentleness toward her in the past just for show ?

Did he like this woman, too ?

What did she mean to him, then ?

She was lost and could not understand anymore.

However, right now, the source of her unhappiness was not that; rather, it was Little Yichen, lying in the hospital bed and feeling down because of his heartlessness, while the man was elsewhere hugging another woman.

When he saw her standing there, panic fled across his face, which he quickly hid.

He did not know how much this stupid woman had seen or heard; even more so, he was clueless on what thoughts were running through her head as she stood there looking at him without moving!

(vit(function())())

He asked, “What are you doing here ?”

They were not standing far apart. The man’s voice boomed clearly, but it seemed to have escaped her ears. As the elevator doors parted open, she turned around and stepped inside it. Pressing the button for a certain floor, she had every intention to return into the kids’ ward!

He was furious when she ignored him and walked into the elevator without replying. In a few large strides, he was close enough to the

elevator to reach out his hand and forcefully prevent its doors from closing.

(B oxnovel.c om) The elevator doors bounced hard against his hand. She was alarmed to see them open again and him stride inside. Standing before her, he pinned her with his angry eyes.

“What are you trying to do?”

She was made confused by his words. “What am I trying to do? I don’t understand what you mean.”

“I’m asking you why you are here and why you are ignoring me. What do you mean by doing that?!” he thundered, clearly antagonized by her cool response. Once the doors closed on them, he marched up to her and forced her into a corner.

She was neither angry nor fretful. With a dull and peaceful look, she countered, “Why can’t I be here? Did my presence disturb your flirtation? If so, I apologize.”

Her strange words only made him angrier. With a frosty look, he lambasted, “Flirtation? What is your mind thinking about all the time?!”

Flirtation?

Song Enya was his niece. Why was a brotherly hug described as flirting?

If this were not a public place, he would really teach this woman a lesson!

She neutrally replied, “I’m not thinking of anything. Who she is to you, what your relationship is, and what you two are doing here, I am not keen to know.”

Her indifference was glaringly irritating to him.

What did she mean by not being keen to know?

How much did she know, and what else did she understand?

He did not know what had gotten into her. He seemed to realize something out of the blue, and with a teasing sneer, asked, “Are you jealous?”

“No. Why should I be jealous of?” she coolly denied.

His sneer froze on his face, and his face darkened at her nonchalance. It was very infuriating.

“Why are you angry, then? Am I really so untrustworthy in your eyes?”

As she looked at his face, she recalled the sadness on Yichen’s face and the terrifying incident at the theme park today.

Her thoughts flitted from the two kids nearly losing their lives back at the Ferris wheel to his earlier flirtation with that woman. Returning to reality and meeting his eyes, she found that earlier hugging scene even more jarring.

In fact, her heart was hurting.

Today is Little Yichen's birthday, isn't it? Is it right for you to abandon him alone at the theme park just because of a misunderstanding?

If this is a punishment, don't you think it is too much for a child?

Little Yichen was in danger; don't you know that?

Chapter 471: I am not qualified.

Little Yichen was in danger; don't you know that?

You are Yichen's father, right?

Her heart went cold at the thoughts running through her head.

"I pegged you as a responsible father," she remarked suddenly.

The statement boggled his mind, and before he could react appropriately to it, she already coldly added another declaration. "I don't know how much your son means to you; in any case, I'm very disappointed with you!"

He was infuriated by her words!

What's with this ridiculous and baseless accusation?!

(vit(function())())

Was this conceited attitude a result of his overindulgence?

(B oxnovel.c om) “Woman, did I spoil you too much?” He tried to reign in his temper, but it was a losing battle, and he was unable to stop himself from grabbing her shoulders with enough force to hurt.

Her words undoubtedly greatly offended him as he sneered. “You are not qualified to judge me as a father!”

Not qualified!?

She looked at him with a start and, after some time, let out a snort!

She was laughing at herself for being concerned when she had no right to be.

That’s right; I’m not qualified!

What he said is correct, so what rights do I have to criticize him?

Haven’t I given up my custody rights of Little Yichen six years ago?

She was an irresponsible mother to begin with. She willingly gave up the custody of her son, so how was she qualified to accuse him of being irresponsible?

She was absolutely in no position to do so!

However, each time she thought of Yichen’s doleful face, pain would grip her heart!

“I may not be qualified, but do you think you are?”

She muttered through gritted teeth, “I know I don’t have Yichen’s custody, so in name, I’m not his mother. I gave up that right to my

son myself, but, Mu Yazhe, he is my flesh and blood, too! I won't fight with you over his custody. Still, my heart aches each time I think of your absence when he was in danger! (B oxnovel.com) Where were you when he needed you the most?!"

Little Yichen was in danger?

What happened?

His heart skipped a beat, and he pressed on hurriedly, "What happened to him?"

"Don't you think it's too late to ask me that now?" she asked in return, feeling greatly distressed. "If you can't take care of him, I'll do that! Yes, he is young and brash, but can't you try to communicate with him better?! Even if you have a misunderstanding, you can still try to reason with him. Is there a need to abandon your son at the theme park?!"

The more deeply she pondered, the angrier she got. She continued to interrogate him. "Are you really that heartless?! Today is his birthday, so ask yourself; what have you done exactly?!"

He was greatly disturbed by her words.

He did not care for this stupid woman telling him off, but while she spoke with great articulation, she would not say what had exactly happened to his son!

Isn't my child at the theme park?

What actually happened?

Little Yichen, who had gone to several military boot camps, was excellent in all aspects of the field training.

That was why he was confident to leave him alone at the theme park.

He wanted to play at the amusement park, right?

He had merely let his kid stay behind at the amusement park to continue his enjoyment; what could have gone wrong with that?!

She let out a sneer. “You said I’m not qualified. Let me ask you, then; who am I to you, and what position do I have in your life?”

Chapter 472: You made mommy angry, lousy!

She let out a sneer. “You said I’m not qualified. Let me ask you, then; who am I to you, and what position do I have in your life? Who am I to you if I don’t even have the rights to check? Am I someone whom you can call and dismiss when you want? Am I somebody whom you look for when you are happy and insult when you are in a bad mood? Is that so?!”

He coldly commanded, “Shut up!”

He pierced her with his sharp and piercing glare at her presumptuous accusations.

Why was there a need for her to speculate his feelings toward her?!

Her heart grew numb at his bellow.

“I thought you were cold and unfeeling toward everyone, but...”

She recalled his earlier loving look at that woman now, and something inside her seemed to collapse.

(vit(function())())

She suddenly felt ashamed of liking this man.

This was good as well. She could end this with a dead heart.

“I’m sorry. I’ve wasted my affections!”

Just then, the elevator doors parted open to the intended floor.

She walked off without looking back.

Once she was back into the hospital ward, she started to pack their things.

Looking at her forlorn figure, Youyou just had to ask her. “Mommy, what happened? What took you so long?”

She continued packing their stuff with her back on the two kids to prevent them from seeing her distraught look.

Her heart was beating painfully.

The two kids exchanged looks, wondering what had gotten into her.

Youyou was not carrying lots of stuff with him. Besides a small haversack, there were only a few essentials; thus, she managed to pack everything quickly.

Standing by his bed, she said, “Youyou, we are going home!”

Her son nodded. The older one panicked upon hearing that. He sat up, looked at her, and asked uneasily, “Are you... leaving?”

He could not bear to see her go!

He was supposed to call his father when he was admitted to the hospital, but he was reluctant to do so for several reasons.

/ B o x n o v e l . c o m / One was that he was still upset with him; another was that he wanted to spend more time with his mother!

He lost his composure once he realized that she was indeed leaving. “What... What about me?”

His father walked into the ward just as he finished asking that. When the man saw his two sons with their respective injuries, his brows furrowed in shock and anger.

“...”

Yichen was startled to see his father walk into the ward first before he assumed that his mother must have informed the man. He was about to call out to him when he stopped himself petulantly.

He could not forgive the man even now.

A blissful day had turned into a fiasco; thus, still angry, he decided to ignore him.

“What happened?!” His father was alarmed.

Nobody, not even Little Yichen, answered him in the room.

Youyou studied his mother's face and then his father's. Easily deducing that the man had offended her again, he all the more ignored him.

His impression of his father was a big negative now.

Whoever made his mommy angry was lousy and could not be forgiven!

The younger twin only suffered minor injuries as the older twin protected him well. As for the latter, he would need to stay in the hospital for further observation.

Although she was firm on leaving with Youyou, she found it difficult to part with Yichen.

Chapter 473: He Finally Calls Her Mommy...

Although he had yet to call her 'mommy' aloud, the intimacy he felt could not be replaced by simply uttering that term of endearment!

She walked to his bed helplessly and softly spoke to him. "Yichen, mom... aunt has to leave! You be good, okay?"

Yichen felt his heart ache terribly. He opened his mouth and wanted so badly to have her stay, yet he could not voice out anything that would make her do so.

He felt that he had no right to request that from her.

His head hung low from the desolation he felt as his eyes were filled with much longing, grief, and even attachment for her. However, he did not want to make things hard for her, so he hid these emotions away.

Ultimately, he said nothing.

Yun Shishi was heartbroken upon seeing his despondent look. She wanted very much to caress his face, but the sight of Mu Yazhe reminded her of his earlier words, and her heart immediately sank!

(vit(function()){)

She retracted her hand reluctantly and left with Youyou in her arms.

Youyou looked at his father with penetratingly cold eyes the moment he passed him by.

The man, however, neither looked in their direction nor urged for them to stay and merely made his way to Yichen's side. However, upon noticing his son's vacuous look as he gazed miserably and longingly at his mother's departing back, for a moment, he almost suffocated from depression!

Yichen watched the mother-son pair exit the ward and was unable to stop himself from getting off his bed. Disregarding his injured arm, he staggered his way to the door but had to halt his steps there.

Seeing that they were already inside the elevator going down, he leaned against the door desolately. When the elevator doors slammed shut, his world also seemed to have come crashing down, and he mumbled with much emotion, "Mommy..."

He stared blankly at the elevator, and as terrible pain gripped his heart, tears uncontrollably fell from his eyes.

He felt that a large portion of his heart had gone missing at her departure, and he could not mend it no matter how much he tried!

Mu Yazhe made his way to the entrance of the ward and lifted him up. Looking at his arm in a cast, he cocked his handsome brow in inquiry. “What happened to your arm?”

Completely ignorant to what had transpired earlier today, he merely attributed his son’s injury to one of the amusement park’s rides malfunctioning.

Yichen turned his head away and ignored him instead.

Toward this son of his, Mu Yazhe held some regret.

He should not have left him in the amusement park alone!

Alas, it was an emergency then. He was worried about Song Enxi’s condition and was not in the mood to question who was in the right and wrong, perceiving it to be inconsequential. His thought was simply on rushing the child to the nearest hospital; this was his responsibility after all, was it not?

His son, unfortunately, refused to leave.

He tried to carry him by force, but the child rejected his contact and even lost his temper.

Since that was the case, he might as well leave him there. His son could enjoy himself for all he wanted.

When he himself acted willful as a child, his father dished out a similar punishment to him. Perhaps, in his mind, this was not inappropriate, but intentionally or not, his decision caused the child pain.

Now, he was reprimanding himself.

He felt regrets to his child, so he conceded to him – something that rarely happened. “It’s daddy’s bad; it’s daddy’s bad. Daddy shouldn’t have left you there. Are you willing to forgive daddy?”

“No.”

Yichen was being difficult and only gave him a one-word reply before ignoring him again.

Yun Shishi’s forlorn expression as she left entirely filled his mind. He was concerned for her. They had just parted not too long ago, but he was already missing her by a lot.

He missed her feeding him tiramisu tenderly, and he missed her warmth when she hugged him.

Suddenly, he could not control himself and burst into tears.

He rarely cried; in fact, he almost never did.

However, for some reason, he felt an indescribable pain in his heart.

Chapter 474: Extorting A Confession 1

On the way back to the Mu residence, in a fit of pique, Yichen's mouth remained firmly shut. He said nothing about the incident today as well.

His father repeatedly attempted to hug him, but he buttoned his lips and shied away from his touch.

Mu Yazhe tried everything to coax an answer from him, yet the little lad was not buying any of it. He could neither be persuaded by reason nor be cowed by force.

He truly had no way to go about this.

If his son remained unforthcoming, he would have to investigate this himself.

In fact, Youyou and Yichen was in a mutual agreement to keep mum about today's incident. The former emphasized to the latter the need for secrecy on this matter, even to their father.

Yichen wholly listened to him and kept everything strictly confidential.

(vit(function())())

Even if the man had this matter investigated, he should at least consider the person holding ownership over Fairy Tale Valley, should he not?

More importantly, would Youyou even give him any leeway to do so?

He must be clear on this first before making his next move.

Still, these were stories for another day.

By the time the father-son pair reached home, a group of private doctors were already waiting for them at the doorstep.

The doctors quickly went up to the two once he carried his son out of the car and into the house.

Mu Wanrou and Mu Sheng happened to be back as well. Learning that Yichen had gotten hurt, the old man's face drained of color, and he inquired about his grandson's wellbeing. However, Yichen, who was feeling dispirited, could not bother to state anything except him being tired. He was attended to by the doctors back in his room before they attached him to an IV drip as he took a rest.

Mu Wanrou also tried inquiring after the matter, but it was unfortunate that Mu Yazhe simply went straight to his study room and busied himself with the company projects, remaining behind closed doors.

Learning from the maids that the man had taken Yichen to the theme park, she felt a little suffocated.

She stealthily headed to the rear garden in the dead of the night and made a call.

A man's defeated voice was heard over the phone. "Miss Mu, I'm sorry. The mission failed."

"WHAT?!" She received this piece of shocking news the moment the call went through. She gritted her teeth in rage but quickly simmered down. "Where is he?"

“...” The line went quiet for a few seconds.

She said with some irk, “D*mn it! What a useless bunch! Can’t you guys even handle a six-year-old?”

“We are sorry to disappoint you!”

“Why are you calling me instead? Where is he?”

She questioned him indifferently.

There was yet another long pause before the person on the other end admitted, “He got caught.”

“WHAT?!” she screeched in horror. This fear quickly crawled into her heart.

On the city outskirts in a secluded underground warehouse.

Li Hanlin unlocked the chains and guided Yun Tianyou into the building. They could vaguely hear a hoarse voice screaming from within.

“Ahhhh!”

Inside the warehouse, a man was locked to a column with his hands tied behind him using a chain. Lying about in the rags, the man’s body displayed evidence of suffering severe whippings, and he convulsed without a pause from the immense pain he was feeling.

His body was already covered with wounds while his face was colored by splotches of blood.

For a moment, the boy could not make out the man's features. He barely identified those bulging eyes, which were now filled with despair, as the killer's! A man in a suit raised the whip in his hand and continuously struck the captive's body with it. The pain nearly crippled the man to his death; he was no longer capable of coherent speech, much less an unbroken groan.

A row of men in black suits lined up orderly at the side of the warehouse. Everyone stood solemnly with emotionless faces, and below their feet were hideous streams of red, formed from the drops of the man's blood.

Chapter 474: Extorting A Confession 1

On the way back to the Mu residence, in a fit of pique, Yichen's mouth remained firmly shut. He said nothing about the incident today as well.

His father repeatedly attempted to hug him, but he buttoned his lips and shied away from his touch.

Mu Yazhe tried everything to coax an answer from him, yet the little lad was not buying any of it. He could neither be persuaded by reason nor be cowed by force.

He truly had no way to go about this.

If his son remained unforthcoming, he would have to investigate this himself.

In fact, Youyou and Yichen was in a mutual agreement to keep mum about today's incident. The former emphasized to the latter the need for secrecy on this matter, even to their father.

Yichen wholly listened to him and kept everything strictly confidential.

(vit(function())())

Even if the man had this matter investigated, he should at least consider the person holding ownership over Fairy Tale Valley, should he not?

More importantly, would Youyou even give him any leeway to do so?

He must be clear on this first before making his next move.

Still, these were stories for another day.

By the time the father-son pair reached home, a group of private doctors were already waiting for them at the doorstep.

The doctors quickly went up to the two once he carried his son out of the car and into the house.

Mu Wanrou and Mu Sheng happened to be back as well. Learning that Yichen had gotten hurt, the old man's face drained of color, and he inquired about his grandson's wellbeing. However, Yichen, who was feeling dispirited, could not bother to state anything except him being tired. He was attended to by the doctors back in his room before they attached him to an IV drip as he took a rest.

Mu Wanrou also tried inquiring after the matter, but it was unfortunate that Mu Yazhe simply went straight to his study room and busied himself with the company projects, remaining behind closed doors.

Learning from the maids that the man had taken Yichen to the theme park, she felt a little suffocated.

She stealthily headed to the rear garden in the dead of the night and made a call.

A man's defeated voice was heard over the phone. "Miss Mu, I'm sorry. The mission failed."

"WHAT?!" She received this piece of shocking news the moment the call went through. She gritted her teeth in rage but quickly simmered down. "Where is he?"

"..." The line went quiet for a few seconds.

She said with some irk, "D*mn it! What a useless bunch! Can't you guys even handle a six-year-old?"

"We are sorry to disappoint you!"

"Why are you calling me instead? Where is he?"

She questioned him indifferently.

There was yet another long pause before the person on the other end admitted, "He got caught."

"WHAT?!" she screeched in horror. This fear quickly crawled into her heart.

On the city outskirts in a secluded underground warehouse.

Li Hanlin unlocked the chains and guided Yun Tianyou into the building. They could vaguely hear a hoarse voice screaming from within.

“Ahhhh!”

Inside the warehouse, a man was locked to a column with his hands tied behind him using a chain. Lying about in the rags, the man’s body displayed evidence of suffering severe whippings, and he convulsed without a pause from the immense pain he was feeling.

His body was already covered with wounds while his face was colored by splotches of blood.

For a moment, the boy could not make out the man’s features. He barely identified those bulging eyes, which were now filled with despair, as the killer’s! A man in a suit raised the whip in his hand and continuously struck the captive’s body with it. The pain nearly crippled the man to his death; he was no longer capable of coherent speech, much less an unbroken groan.

A row of men in black suits lined up orderly at the side of the warehouse. Everyone stood solemnly with emotionless faces, and below their feet were hideous streams of red, formed from the drops of the man’s blood.

Chapter 475: Extorting A Confession 2

Despite going through such a cruel interrogation, the man's lips remained tightly zipped and uttered no truths.

Yun Tianyou slowly walked toward the man under the dim yellow lights and sized him up. He then sat with his legs crossed elegantly on a couch Li Hanlin had brought over. While his lean body languidly sank back into his seat, his delicate face revealed nothing except chilling solemnity.

Yes, he was a child, but none could overlook the fearsome air he exuded.

There was domination and severity in the depths of his eyes, and although he tried hard to restrain himself, the darkness, which seemed inherent in him, could not be completely concealed.

The lashings continued.

Sans his command, no one would stop it.

Gloom, shock, and dread pervaded the air inside the warehouse.

(vit(function())())

The boy's beautiful, half-lidded eyes, with only frigidity contained, made no contact whatsoever with the man's. He simply immersed himself in his own world in silence.

No matter how horrifying the man's screams sounded due to the unabated whipping, his eyes remained as calm, and unaffected, as the waves.

Gradually, the man stopped screaming. The agent slowly turned to his boss and said in a hushed voice, “Mr. Yun, he is silent now.”

The calm and composed boy raised his eyes to regard the bloody man on the floor and asked with much chill, “Is he dead?”

“No. He just fainted from the pain.”

“Oh.” He nodded nonchalantly as his thin lips took on a cruel curve. “Wake him up.”

“Yes!”

Li Hanlin rushed to heed his order by having his men bring over a bucket of saltwater.

The poor man, who had just fainted from much torture, was then woken to reality by a splash of cold saltwater. Once more, the brutal torture resumed.

“Kill me! Kill me!”

The boy turned a deaf ear to his pleas and even appeared completely detached to what was happening before him. He did not even spare the man a look.

His silence continued until the man was knocked out for the second time.

The agent made his way to him and moved to inquire about their next move when he spoke, “Put him on the floor.”

“Mm.”

Li Hanlin placed him on the ground.

The boy lazily left the couch and sauntered over to the prone man. Kicking his body with some force, he confirmed to himself that the man had indeed fainted. His brows could not help creasing. “He is this tight-lipped?”

“He seems to be a professional killer and refuses to say anything. We’ve used all sorts of methods to make him sing, but he steadfastly spilled nothing.”

He analyzed his facial features and said soberly, “It’s him.”

“Huh?”

“He caused my older brother’s arm to be in pain!” His lips pulled into a chilling curve. “He’s not willing to say anything, hm? Fine. I’ll play with him.”

He then proceeded to give a spine-chilling order. “Attach his limbs on the wall.”

“The wall... How?”

The few men standing at the side questioned.

The wall was bare and had nothing to fasten the man with. How should he be tied up there?

He glanced sideways and walked over to the one conducting this torture session. He took out a sharp dagger from his waist with his small hand. “Using this.”

Everyone quaked in fear.

He meant to secure the man's limbs on the wall using daggers.

What a vicious method!

For a child to think of such a brutal method to interrogate someone was simply hair-raising.

His men dared not laze around and quickly did as per his order. Thinking that the daggers were insufficient to hold the man up, this lot brought over dowel pins.

Chapter 476: Extorting A Confession 3

This warehouse was halfway completed when it was abandoned, so construction tools were still lying around it. Someone quickly brought over a metal hammer.

A few men in suits carried the unconscious man to the wall, propped him against its flat surface, and then positioned him spread-eagle. With the nails aimed at his wrists and ankles, they exerted pressure and pierced through his limbs!

With a loud pong—

The man was driven to consciousness by the excruciating pain that suddenly coursed through his four limbs. His blood-shot eyes opened round and wide, with veins and blood vessels visibly popping up on his face!

“Ahhhh!”

No one could understand the extent of cruelty unless one experienced it personally.

The man struggled and screamed himself hoarse.

(vit(function())()

The boy signaled with his eye for his agent to have his lackeys splash the captive cold water. Somewhat more coherent, the man lifted his half-dying face to a smart-looking boy before him.

With a stern face, the boy said, “You are dead for sure today.”

The man snorted. Dead? What was there to fear of death? When he accepted this assignment, he was already prepared to die if he failed.

The boy seemed to sense the man’s readiness to die, so he gave him a last chilling warning. “You can choose: die swiftly or die slowly. Which death do you prefer?”

“Swift death,” the man replied through clenched teeth without thinking.

The boy smiled evilly. “All right. I can fulfill your wish, but under one condition, and that is you tell me the schemer behind the assassination attempt and your actual target!”

“Hmph!” He sneered at the boy’s naivety, never once taking him as a threat!

He was a trained killer.

In this profession, once he accepted an assignment, either he received his reward for succeeding or lost his life for failing. There was no such thing as betraying his employer!

It was his miscalculation that had caused him to be caught!

This chap was too obstinate to get answers from. Taking a piece of black cloth from his agent's hand, he casually said, "Hmm. All right, then. Let me play along with you."

His soft and playful laughter was just right for his age, but his every word sent a chill down everyone's spines!

"Gag him!"

His agent ordered the lackeys to cover the captive's mouth.

Yun Tianyou then took a container from his agent's hand, which carried dozens of exquisite darts, and asked the man with finality, "Who ordered the 'hit'?"

The man pressed his lips firmly together, refusing to answer.

With a smile, the boy threw the dart at him.

Throwing darts was his forte. Due to his sickly constitution, when he was much younger, he would play some games at home out of boredom. This was one such game.

It was hard to tell if he had good aim with his eyes blindfolded, though.

With a dull thud, the dart hit the man's abdomen.

The man tried to prevent himself from making any sound, but within a split-second, his face contorted into a hideous look of unspeakable pain!

“Mmphhhh!”

He caught his breath as his body went into an uncontrollable spasm.

This was no ordinary dart. It had been dipped with acid.

The acid seeped and ate through his flesh, which was already covered with fresh wounds.

Chapter 477: I am having too much fun to stop

Some of the man’s wounds were bloody and mangled with saltwater. Yun Tianyou’s dart hit an open wound on his belly nicely.

The dart would not go deep with its short tip, so shooting using it was not fatal. However, the acid and the saltwater created a chemical reaction that sizzled into green smoke. The pain caused by the erosion at the wound site could only be experienced fully by the man.

At some point, the man’s throat no longer produced a sound.

The boy’s brows furrowed pitifully. “Oh, no. Did I hit him?”

“Yes, you did,” his agent confirmed.

The boy broke into a lovely smile.

He then took another dart and readied himself to throw it at the man.

(vit(function()())

“Mmph... mmm... mmmph!” The man unintelligibly mumbled his surrender.

The boy was just getting into position, yet the man had nearly pissed his pants from the sight.

It appeared that he was truly terrified this time.

After all, the excruciating pain was unbearable even to a man heavily involved in the business of killing people.

He was a veteran killer – a person whose hands had been dyed with blood for the most part of his life. He had long been numbed to any emotions, including fear of death!

Right now, however, he was truly cowed by this six-year-old’s tactic.

This must be a joke...

Is this really a six-year-old boy?

The man struggled to open his lids, which were made heavy by the blood trickling down his forehead. He blinked to regain his vision and finally caught a good glimpse of the boy’s face.

The child, who was small for his age, was dressed in a white shirt and dungarees. His raven hair framed his face and nicely complemented his fair skin. The kid, although blindfolded, was

evidently smiling from the way his eyes crinkled at the corner. His sharp nose, adorable lips, and rosy cheeks accentuated his naïve and tender aura.

However, his presence alone was exuding a spine-chilling foreboding.

Even his smile seemed eerie and goosebumps-inducing!

Is this child only six?

He could not believe it.

How could a six-year-old come up with such an inhumane method of torture?

“What is he saying?” The child raised a brow jestingly.

The agent signaled a lackey to remove the gag from the captive’s mouth.

The poor man begged pathetically, “Stop, please! Finish me off! I don’t want...”

“Why should I stop just because you asked?” The boy tilted his head with a smile. His voice tinkled tenderly and lovingly, yet his words were chilling to the bones.

The man’s face turned ashen. “I’m just a hired killer. I merely followed orders!”

“Touché. I’m just a kid needing a playmate, and you happen to be that right now.” He smiled gracefully.

With that, he lifted his wrist.

The tip of the dart glinted coldly.

“No... I’ll speak!”

“Oh, no, don’t. Are you confessing so soon?” The boy sounded disappointed. “I thought you were more stubborn than that, but I apparently made a mistake. Look at you; hurrying to confess just because of a little pain!”

“I’ll tell you everything; I just want a swift death!”

“Boring! I’m not done playing yet. Let’s talk after I enjoy myself some more.”

Chapter 478: Revenge for Little Yichen

Yun Tianyou’s lips curled into a disdainful smile. “Let me tell you; I can still find out who the mastermind is even if you don’t tell me. Since you’ve stepped on my nerves, you must bear the consequences!”

A sharp gleam fled across his eyes as he made that declaration.

With a smooth flick of his wrist, the dart left his hand and sailed to the man’s thigh.

The sharp tip eroded the skin and burned the inside to reveal his bone.

“Arghhh!”

As if struck by lightning, he struggled and convulsed in a mad frenzy.

Swish!

(vit(function())())

A dart neatly flew and hit his eye this time.

Plop!

Fresh and warm blood splattered all over.

The man was assaulted by a fiery and acute pain!

The man could no longer form a coherent sound. He violently convulsed before letting out an ear-splitting wail.

“AHHHH! AHHHH! AHHH—”

Li Hanlin, who was standing at the side, felt horrified at scene he was witnessing.

With mixed emotions, he bowed to look at his boss and then suggested, “Director Yun, why don’t you let your father deal with this matter?”

“Agent Li, what do you mean by that?” he asked in return. “This is my affairs and not his!”

“But... This will dirty your hands!” The agent ached for the child.

A six-year-old child should be pure and naïve; he should not be involved in such things.

You looked baffled.

Dirty?

“Hmph,” he huffed lightly. “I’ll do anything to protect my mother, even if it means staining my hands with blood.”

The agent was deeply shaken and could not respond for a time!

This statement was enough to fill him with deep admiration for the boy at this very moment!

The agent wondered what kind of dark past this child had to turn him into this calm, daring, and vicious person even at such a young age. He was an adorable and lovely yet evil and unscrupulous boy.

The tendencies and delicacies of a child were absent in him. An ordinary kid would be overwhelmed by fear in this kind of situation; he, on the other hand, was as calm as ever. He even went ahead and personally tortured a cold-blooded killer for answer until the latter was begging for death.

Where did this boy learn this viciousness?

He really resembled his father in this aspect.

Mu Yazhe was also a vicious man.

Is that trait hereditary?

The boy elegantly removed his blindfold and stood admiring the agony on the captive's face. He then slowly walked toward the man.

“Is it painful?”

“Cough, cough—”

The man regurgitated a mouthful of blood, unable to answer the boy anymore.

“Pain is good.”

The more pain he suffered, the more satisfied he would be.

He recalled his mother's face crumbling with worry.

He also thought of the injuries suffered by his brother while protecting him.

What was his pain compared to theirs?

He nicely delivered those three darts to the man on behalf of him, his mother, and his brother.

“You can speak now.”

The man was still convulsing as he lifted his head to look at the boy hazily. Pain had rendered him only partly conscious. His mouth did not move for a long time.

The worst thing one could experience was a slow and painful death.

The only thing that could be worse than that would be a tormenting death.

He had seen ruthless men in his dealings with the underworld.

He had not admired any of them for their sadism.

Here, for the first time, was someone whom he was really terrified of from the bottom of his heart.

Outwardly, this child was a picture of innocence with his angelic face.

Chapter 479: Scarier than the King of Hell

Outwardly, he was a picture of innocence with his angelic face.

Inwardly, he was much more frightening than the king of hell!

“Hm ? Not talking ?” He cocked a brow, dissatisfied at his defiance. He stuck his hands into his pants pockets and drove a foot on to the man’s abdomen. This caused the latter to let out a pain-filled groan. “Speak. Are you mute ? My patience is wearing thin. This is your last chance; don’t waste it!”

“I’ll talk... I’ll talk...”

“Good boy.” He placed his hands behind him and, looking like an elegant and polite young man, asked with an air of nonchalance, “Who exactly is your target ?”

“I received this mission three days ago. My employer offered me two million to kill off two people.”

“Which two?”

(vit(function()){)

“First is Yun Shishi and second is her son, Yun Tianyou.” The man fixed his gaze on to him. “You!”

Something flickered in his eyes. While he looked stoic on the outside, he was actually already all over the place on the inside.

He already knew that he was this man’s target and could roughly guess that his mother was also one.

He gripped his fists tightly as a deadly look fled across his lovely face.

Someone actually dared hire an assassin to kill his mother...

D*mn it!

Recalling that day, if his mother had not been lucky enough to be separated from them, it was possible for her to have been in danger as well. Thinking up to this, bloodthirst surfaced in his eyes.

“Who ordered the ‘hit’?”

“He he he... Ha ha ha!” the man guffawed. “I’m a hired killer. She paid the money, so I carried out her order. It’s as simple as that! I shouldn’t be revealing my employer’s identity in the first place, but I must give my hat to you! In the end, I want a quick and painless death! Don’t torture me anymore!”

“Fine. I accept your terms.” He agreed to his imploration, as if he were bestowing him the greatest gift. “Speak. Who’s that person?”

His lips quivered as he spoke. “Mu Wanrou!”

“Mu Wanrou?”

His brows came together tightly. Clearly, he was unfamiliar with the name.

Li Hanlin, meanwhile, was startled at first and then appalled. “Why is it her?!”

“You know her?” He raised his eyes to his agent before he narrowed them with menace.

“Mm! I’ll explain her identity in detail to you later,” the agent assured.

He returned his gaze on to the man and asked emotionlessly, “Why did she want to get rid of me?”

“Of course, she didn’t let me in on the specifics! She only said that you are a spawn that must be disposed as you’re a threat to her position!” The man strained to move his lips despite the pain.

“I must be disposed of?” Yun Tianyou quickly caught on to this cryptic phrase.

The man coughed up blood a few times before he replied, “Yun Shishi gave birth to two children as a surrogate for the Mu family six years ago. One child was pronounced as stillborn. The Mus all assumed that he’s dead, but Old Mu recently acquired information

stating that this child is alive. Naturally, he would want to return this child to the Mu family.”

The boy squinted his eyes. He came up to him and demanded, “What else do you know? Spill everything.”

“As for why she wants to have your mother eliminated, it has something to do with her birth. I only managed to get this much information!” Speaking tired him out, so he shut his eyes thereafter. The immense pain coursing through his body had slightly dulled his senses, and when he made his request, it was with a trembling voice. “I beg you; give me a quick and painless death!”

Chapter 480: The Powers Behind Yun Tianyou

As a professional killer, after accepting a mission, he would conduct a background check on his employer.

However, with Mu Wanrou’s identity, he could only gather this much information about her. This was all he truly knew!

Yun Tianyou’s eyes slowly blinked once before a sinister arch formed on his lips. “Rest in peace.”

He spun around the moment he finished saying that and took elegant strides out of the warehouse without looking back.

A shot rang out the instant the doors shut, shattering the silence in this dark place.

By the time Li Hanlin walked out, Yun Tianyou was already deep in his thoughts inside the car.

“All settled?”

(vit(function()())

The agent nodded. “Yes!”

“Let’s go!”

...

Sitting comfortably in the rear seat of the car, Yun Tianyou gracefully propped his chin in his one hand as he indifferently looked outside the window.

Li Hanlin, who was sitting beside him, filled him in on what he knew about Mu Wanrou.

However, as the information at hand was limited, the boy was unable to figure out her motive for hiring a killer.

He only said, “Things aren’t that simple. In five days, gather every piece of intel about her.”

“Understood.” The agent gave him a clear and affirmative reply.

At the same time, inside the Mu residence.

In the study room, Mu Yazhe sat before his table and pored over a thick stack of documents. Min Yu, who was silently standing behind him, carefully watched his words and gestures.

“Just this?”

“Yes. All information on Lezhi Holdings is here.”

Mu Yazhe lifted his eyes, his brows furrowed.

With his sons injured, he would naturally look into the incident at the amusement park.

However, all information about that incident was sealed off. Since there was a shooting incident, Fairy Tale Valley closed its doors three hours earlier and evacuated all those still inside. As for media personnel who tried to get a scoop, Fairy Tale Valley provided them with a perfect PR and gave no reaction to any allegations about the said incident.

Such a shooting incident was definitely a big blow to a public place for entertainment like Fairy Tale Valley.

Normally, when such an incident occurred, the media and the police would have a field day getting to the bottom of it.

However, even now, all information about the shooting was kept under wraps and away from the public. Media personnel was barred from entering the premise, thus there were no news coverage about the incident thus far.

Some visitors posted about it online, but their posts were quickly taken down, and their accounts were even suspended or, worse, banned.

Min Yu secretly did his investigation, but Fairy Tale Valley’s hold on information was not something to scoff at.

He merely learned that there was a shooting incident at the theme park; further details were more or less unavailable.

Fairy Tale Valley was a joint venture between Lezhi Holdings and N.E. Group.

N.E. Group was not a very powerful entity, yet Lezhi Holdings was not to be taken lightly.

Lezhi Holdings was a toy manufacturing company on the brink of bankruptcy just a year ago when it was bought by Hurricane Group.

The board members were replaced, company shares were divided, and the CEO was changed. In a short amount of time, it reached the top to become the largest top-class toy manufacturing company in the world.

It had industrial chains in North America, Europe, and Asia.

Nonetheless, the new chairman of the company, who held 60 percent of its shares, remained a mystery.

Nothing was actually worth noting about a toy manufacturing company, but since it was backed by Hurricane Group, a force to be reckoned with, it was a different matter altogether.

Hurricane Group was previously known as a notorious smuggling ring. At present, it was deemed as the most infamous firearm supplier worldwide, with it direct supplying weapons in nearly half of the globe.

Chapter 481: Hurricane Group!

Hurricane Group was in control of half the market for arms dealing and had close ties with the government, mafia, and terrorist groups. Its influence spanned across the dark and light sides of globe and boasted of an impressive number of mercenaries.

This, perhaps, could not be directly perceived by the senses.

However, phrasing this differently, Hurricane Group took charge of 50 percent of the world's firearms. Out of every 100 guns in existence, 50 would come from this organization.

When there was an outbreak of war, the parties involved would, at the very least, order several billions of yuan's worth of firearms from Hurricane Group.

Thus, saying that this group was so powerful everyone feared them would not be an exaggeration.

Disheng Financial Group was also an entity that became powerful and influential not just through legal means but also illegal methods. Struggles for power and control in the background were complex, so at a certain point, if a company wanted to broaden its horizon, it had to involve itself with things above the law.

Speaking of forces in the capital, there were only two families, the Gu and the Mu, vying for the top.

(vit(function())())

Hurricane Group was, however, not simply a criminal syndicate.

Every move it made could implicate the existence of global forces.

Therefore, it was questionable how a mere toy company could be linked with such a powerful firearms group!

“I heard that the mysterious CEO of Lezhi Holdings is very young. After Hurricane Group took over the company, he parachuted to the board of directors and seized control of the whole company. I believe he is no simple character. His involvement with Hurricane Group should be quite deep!” Min Yu voiced out his opinion.

Mu Yazhe’s brows creased as he fiddled with his pen. His man added with a trace of fear, “If news of the shooting at the amusement park gets out, it will definitely have a substantial impact to Lezhi’s reputation! Instead, all information is sealed off and the police can hardly intervene; this feat is impossible for a sheer toy company.”

Mu Yazhe was casually thumbing through the information when his eyes suddenly widened as he spotted something.

Lezhi Board of Directors: Li Hanlin.

Something changed in his eyes. In that instant, Li Hanlin’s appearance popped up in his head.

This man, the self-proclaimed principal of Youyou’s kindergarten, appeared at the latter’s ward before.

He also encountered him at Fairy Tale Valley. At that time, he was one of the theme park’s key personnel.

He was in such a hurry then that he did not take much notice of him.

Recalling about it now, this matter was suddenly queer to him.

Since he was a Lezhi Holdings' higher up, then...

Mu Yazhe's eyes slightly darkened.

“Who is this Li Hanlin?”

“He is the top board member at Lezhi and wields a lot of power.”

He was stunned. A suspicion grew in his heart; it was something that startled and dumbfounded him.

He somewhat formed a bold guess about Yun Tianyou's identity.

...

By the time Youyou made it home, the first few streaks of sunlight had already made their appearance in the sky.

It was near daybreak.

He stealthily changed into his slippers and was skulking in the living room when the lights suddenly flickered on!

Startled, he stood stock-still while in a daze.

“Where did you go?”

Yun Shishi was sitting on the sofa. She was giving him a peeved look. She seemed not to have slept for the entire night as signs of weariness were evident on her face; her eyes were entirely bloodshot.

He was shocked. After much thinking, he quickly clung on to her and asked endearingly, “Mommy, why are you sitting here?”

Chapter 482: Can you trust Youyou, please?

“Waiting for you!” Yun Shishi coolly replied. His petulant tactic failed to work this time as she continued angrily, “Where did you go?”

“I went for a walk in the garden.” He tugged fretfully at his sleeve, and just like a boy caught red-handed, he looked alarmed and helpless!

He did do something wrong.

His mother chillingly countered, “I went looking for you in the garden, but I couldn’t find you there. Youyou, why are you lying to mommy?”

“Mommy...” He got a shock from her reply. He did not expect her to discover his act of sneaking out and to sit waiting here in the dark for who knew how long!

Before he left the house, he confirmed that his mother was fast asleep first. Even then, he was careful not to make a sound.

Why...

(vit(function())())

When did she find out?

She stared unblinkingly at him; her face was a mask of fury and sadness. For reasons unknown, she had been startled awake not too

long after his departure. She went to his bedroom to check on him, but when she flicked on the lights, he was not there.

She was lost and listless when she could not find him but did not want to alert her father. In the end, she went looking for him alone and even had to seek the guard on duty for help. From the video surveillance, he was seen leaving inside a car.

Based on his actions, he got into the car willingly. He was not dragged into it, nor was he struggling at that time, so that eliminated the possibility of a kidnapping.

She noted down the car's plate number. According to what she knew of her son, he would return home before dawn if he had truly left the house willingly this midnight.

That was why she could bear to wait for his return in the living room.

He looked at her guiltily. Seeing her looking haggard and uneasy, he nervously explained, "Mommy, don't you worry; Youyou didn't do anything wrong! Youyou just..."

He was unable to come up with a plausible reason even after some thought.

This was not the right time to tell her the truth!

He did not even dare to reveal his identity to her, so how could he confess the truth about tonight?

"Youyou, do you know how worried mommy was for you?" She knew that he was not ready to tell her the truth when he trailed off.

She stooped down and hugged him by his shoulders.

She was still distraught after the assault at the amusement park. What if something happened to Youyou again?

“Mommy, Youyou made you worry, but I can promise that what I did won’t be harmful to you! Mommy, can you trust Youyou, please?”

Give me some more time; I’ll explain everything to you at the right moment!

Just not today!

She looked at him and asked, “Promise?”

“Eh! I promise! This will be the last time; there won’t be a next time!” He hugged and kissed her as he comforted, “Mommy, Youyou can’t tell you what he did today, but I will definitely do so when the time is ripe! Can mommy give Youyou some time, please?”

She was tickled by the serious look on his face.

What is this thing about ‘the ripe time’?

“All right. Mommy is glad to see you safe and sound, but you should know that today is the last; don’t let it happen again!” she disgruntledly warned.

Although she wanted to know where he had gone off to and what he had done this time, she knew she could not force the truth out of him since he was not ready to talk.

Chapter 483: Please help me

Her son was different from other children and could make sound decision at his age.

Thus, the only thing she could do now was carry him to his bedroom.

Following the usual routine, she lay in the bed with him and narrated to him a bedtime story.

He nestled in her embrace and fell asleep peacefully as he listened to her gentle voice.

She applied for a few days' leave and brought her father and son for a holiday getaway.

For a few days, everything was calm and peaceful.

When she returned for the training, Qin Zhou informed her that she would be graduating ahead of time due to its clash with her upcoming filming schedule!

(vit(function())())

It should be another peaceful morning for her, but an unexpected guest appeared before her that afternoon.

It was Mr. Qian whom she had previously met at a Chinese restaurant.

She tried making a slip when she saw him at the office, but he would not let her off so easily. He stood at the doorway and blocked her way with a pleading look on his face!

“Miss Yun, Miss Yun... please don't misunderstand my intention. I'm not here for the wrong reasons! My humble self is here today to seek your kind assistance! Please, you've got to help me!”

She did not let her guard down and continued to observe him with vigilance.

Qian Shaohua knew she had gotten a bad impression of him before, so he took a deep bow and apologized sincerely, “Miss Yun, please forgive my past ignorance and misconduct! I know I did something wrong; I humbly seek your magnanimous forgiveness! I deeply regretted my bad behavior and lewdness back then! It's my... In short, I'm truly remorseful for that incident last time. I shall do my best to compensate you for everything. I just hope that you will help me with a thing!”

“I don't understand what you mean.”

“Before I proceed, may I kindly seek for your forgiveness?” He looked at her with regret, a sign that he was truly remorseful!

Well, he was supercilious when they parted ways last time. What caused him to change drastically and made him come begging for forgiveness now?

Still, she did not intend to hold a grudge against him, so she merely said, “It's all water under the bridge. I forgive you for your past offense.”

“Thank you!” He thanked her profusely and then went to tell her his reason for the sudden visit.

He happened to be eyeing a parcel of land at the New District some time ago. He planned to develop that plot into an exclusive condominium after he purchased it.

Having heard that Disheng had big plans for this plot of land and the surrounding area, he saw it as a huge business opportunity.

Before this, one of the land developers under Disheng Financial Group purchased a big plot at the New District. This was because he received insider news that Mu Yazhe was preparing to develop it into a grand commercial hub, with Disheng’s newest office at its helm, a major tourist destination, a large eco-tourism park, and mega funfair. Many companies that had also caught wind of this news wanted to jump on the bandwagon.

This led to the price for a piece of land at New District to skyrocket. However, despite the price for a parcel steadily becoming steeper, the available plots continued to dwindle.

The industry watchers knew that investing in this would be a sure win since the development involved Disheng!

Chapter 484 – Desperate – Read novel online for free

Chapter 484: Desperate

Following the plans laid out by Disheng Financial Group, schools, hospitals, cinemas and theaters, eco-tourism parks, and scenic

attractions would also be constructed. Using the influence of Disheng, along with the entry of Wan City Department Store and supermarkets, and transportation companies, the infrastructure for this area would be developed. This remote suburb would, thus, become a bustling district in no time!

It might even become a central business district in the future!

While Qian Shaohua was not experienced in real-estate investment, he was banking on Disheng's influence and power, as well as his business acumen and foresight, on this. Being a business savvy, he put a lot of money into this based on the conglomerate's huge development plans.

The land price was steadily rising without him needing to officiate the development plan. If nothing went wrong, he would be reaping aplenty from this investment!

However, he had accidentally ruffled Chairman Mu's feathers before. The young CEO was no longer keen in this development project.

This was bad news, indeed.

Disheng Financial Group sent an official statement to the media that it would suspend all projects and plans associated to the New District.

(vit(function())())

Following this announcement, all the potential investors slowed down the speed of their construction.

This was not a loss to Disheng as the land belonged to it. Developing it now or later would not make much of a difference.

Any losses Disheng would incur by postponing its development for the next one or two years was just inconsequential. Alas, the same could not be said for Qian Shaohua!

Betting on this project, he had practically emptied his bank account and put all of it on this investment.

He knew he would be raking in money at the end of the day by following Disheng's investment trail.

Truly, he had not expected the conglomerate to postpone the development project without warning.

His condominium was still halfway through completion. He might be able to hold on if the postponement was just a few months, but if Mu Yazhe maliciously suspended the project for one or two years, then his poor self would be reduced to nothing!

Everything hinged on Disheng's intention to develop the area into a prosperous and bustling district!

If Disheng truly pulled out from the project, just imagining how much the land price would plummet was already daunting!

He did not expect that the man would be so ruthless just because of a woman. Still, he decided to wait for further news while he suppressed his anxiety.

However, when he learned that Disheng had decided to develop the area into a centralized industrial district, he could no longer repress himself!

This tactic was just too heartless and ruthless!

Fully aware that he was building a residential area for the rich and powerful in the district, Mu Yazhe was clearly doing it on purpose!

It made no difference to Disheng if the land was turned into an industrial zone; he, meanwhile, would make a big loss! Who would want to buy a house next to an industrial estate? More importantly, who would want to stay in a place with a high index for air pollution?

With this seemingly mindless and ostensible move, Mu Yazhe was steadily pushing him close to a dead end.

Qian Shaohua could no longer sit still. He approached the young CEO a few times, but his request for an audience was denied!

Did he really think his status could let him waltz into Disheng's CEO's office when he wanted to?!

Now, this got him worried sick!

What could he do?

As long as this development project remained ongoing, every day was a huge loss for him!

She was unmoved by his repeated pleas and simply said, "I can forgive you if that's what you are after, but it's impossible if you want me to plead for you before Mu Yazhe."

"Why?" he asked in bafflement before he cautiously probed, "Is it because you think I'm not sincere enough?"

She found it a pain to clarify her standing in the man's life. "My relationship with Mu Yazhe is not what you have in mind. My words don't carry weight with him. You've overestimated me!"

She tried to walk away after saying that.

(vit(function())()

Qian Shaohua held her back on reflex. Perceiving her coldness and silence, he was almost in tears as he pleaded, "Please! You are my only hope! You say you don't mean a thing to Mr. Mu? That's a joke, right? He's pushing me into a dead end simply because I have indecent designs on you! I know I'm in the wrong now, and I'm deeply regretting it!"

The man proceeded to slap his cheek. "Chairman Mu has his heart set on you; please believe me! Your word is enough to save me! Please!"

"Mr. Qian, I won't explain further. I insist about not having the ability to influence his decision." With that, she swerved around him and left.

He could only stomp his feet in anxiety behind her.

She reckoned he would stop harassing her after this firm rejection. Contrary to expectation, he shadowed her more relentlessly over the next two days. No matter where she went, he would be present.

The last straw came when, on her way home, she saw a car tailing hers from the rearview mirror. She knew immediately that it could only be Qian Shaohua!

Irritated, she got off the car.

The car following hers stopped at the roadside as well and the man alighted from it. She opened her mouth to speak when he dropped to his knees before her without warning.

She was totally paralyzed.

In a solemn tone, he said, “Miss Yun, I’m begging you, please; I’m pleading this time! Please help me this one time to put in a kind word for me before Mr. Mu! No matter what the outcome may be, I won’t bother you again!”

Irked by his relentless harassment, she finally gave in. “All right. I promise, but you must stop stalking me!”

He heaved a huge sigh of relief and nearly kowtowed to her.

She wryly said, “Get up; don’t do this, please! I will go home now. Please don’t follow me anymore!”

By the time she reached home, it was almost eight at night.

The moment she pushed open the front door, Youyou, who was reading his book, jumped off the coach and rushed to hug her.

“Mommy, you are back! Youyou has been faithfully waiting for you all this while!”

Unable to conceal her lethargy, she ruffled his head apologetically. “I’m sorry, Youyou; I’m late tonight!”

“You’re wrong, mommy; you are late every night!” He stood on his toes and reached for her coat and briefcase. After putting those aside, he said, “Mommy, the dinner I prepared for you is already cold. Let me heat it up. I will serve it to you quickly!”

He reheated it a few times before her return.

She took a seat and eyed the simple home-cooked spread on the table; she was very touched. This meal might not be a feast, but it had all the qualities of good food.

“Youyou, it must be hard on you. Thank you!”

Chapter 485: Promise

Now, this got him worried sick!

What could he do?

As long as this development project remained ongoing, every day was a huge loss for him!

She was unmoved by his repeated pleas and simply said, “I can forgive you if that’s what you are after, but it’s impossible if you want me to plead for you before Mu Yazhe.”

“Why?” he asked in bafflement before he cautiously probed, “Is it because you think I’m not sincere enough?”

She found it a pain to clarify her standing in the man's life. "My relationship with Mu Yazhe is not what you have in mind. My words don't carry weight with him. You've overestimated me!"

She tried to walk away after saying that.

(vit(function())())

Qian Shaohua held her back on reflex. Perceiving her coldness and silence, he was almost in tears as he pleaded, "Please! You are my only hope! You say you don't mean a thing to Mr. Mu? That's a joke, right? He's pushing me into a dead end simply because I have indecent designs on you! I know I'm in the wrong now, and I'm deeply regretting it!"

The man proceeded to slap his cheek. "Chairman Mu has his heart set on you; please believe me! Your word is enough to save me! Please!"

"Mr. Qian, I won't explain further. I insist about not having the ability to influence his decision." With that, she swerved around him and left.

He could only stomp his feet in anxiety behind her.

She reckoned he would stop harassing her after this firm rejection. Contrary to expectation, he shadowed her more relentlessly over the next two days. No matter where she went, he would be present.

The last straw came when, on her way home, she saw a car tailing hers from the rearview mirror. She knew immediately that it could only be Qian Shaohua!

Irritated, she got off the car.

The car following hers stopped at the roadside as well and the man alighted from it. She opened her mouth to speak when he dropped to his knees before her without warning.

She was totally paralyzed.

In a solemn tone, he said, “Miss Yun, I’m begging you, please; I’m pleading this time! Please help me this one time to put in a kind word for me before Mr. Mu! No matter what the outcome may be, I won’t bother you again!”

Irked by his relentless harassment, she finally gave in. “All right. I promise, but you must stop stalking me!”

He heaved a huge sigh of relief and nearly kowtowed to her.

She wryly said, “Get up; don’t do this, please! I will go home now. Please don’t follow me anymore!”

By the time she reached home, it was almost eight at night.

The moment she pushed open the front door, Youyou, who was reading his book, jumped off the coach and rushed to hug her.

“Mommy, you are back! Youyou has been faithfully waiting for you all this while!”

Unable to conceal her lethargy, she ruffled his head apologetically. “I’m sorry, Youyou; I’m late tonight!”

“You’re wrong, mommy; you are late every night!” He stood on his toes and reached for her coat and briefcase. After putting those aside, he said, “Mommy, the dinner I prepared for you is already cold. Let me heat it up. I will serve it to you quickly!”

He reheated it a few times before her return.

She took a seat and eyed the simple home-cooked spread on the table; she was very touched. This meal might not be a feast, but it had all the qualities of good food.

“Youyou, it must be hard on you. Thank you!”

Chapter 486: He is your daddy!

He sat across the table from her. With his little hands propping his head contentedly, he said, “Not at all! Youyou is happy if mommy enjoys my cooking.”

“Youyou cooks very well; it’s better than those made by Michelin chefs!” She held up her thumb and unabashedly showered her baby with praises.

Blushing, he hastily urged, “Mommy, quickly finish your dinner. What if it turns cold again?”

“Eh!”

She lifted her bowl of rice and gobbled down its recently heated content.

Her son observed her for a bit before he said in a hushed voice,
“Mommy, Youyou wants to ask something!”

“Huh?”

(vit(function())()

“That man you introduced as your university professor... um... Who is he exactly?”

She had just swallowed a mouthful of rice when he asked that question. It got her coughing non-stop.

He readily presented soup before her to help her wash down the stuck food in her throat with it. Seeing her down the soup in big gulps, he said wryly, “Mommy, you look ugly when you eat!”

“Youyou,” she grudgingly asked, “are you saying that I look terrible when eating?”

“Eh. You don’t look elegant at all. Mommy, you shouldn’t eat like this when you are outside, or else you’ll scare others off. Your baby here is used to your inelegant table manners, so it’s okay to behave like this at home.” He had a resigned look on his face.

“What is the problem with the way I eat?”

She did not take his words to heart. His earlier question had just given her so much shock she had choked on her food.

“Don’t change the topic! You always avoid answering when I ask a question. Don’t take me for a kid, mommy; I’m not that gullible.”

He could see that she was trying to maneuver herself away from the question again. This time, though, he would not let her off.

“Am I doing that?”

“Answer my question, then; who exactly is that uncle?” She was cornered by his graceful smile and relentless questioning.

She sighed sheepishly, put down the utensils, and looked him in the eye. “I’m sorry. Mommy lied to Youyou previously; he’s not my university professor.”

“I know.” He cocked a brow at her.

“You do? Last time—”

“Mommy, sometimes your IQ is really lacking! I was just playing along with you last time. I do look in the mirror, you know?”

He looked at her resignedly. It was clear from his words that he easily saw the physical similarities between him and that man.

The boy had known his relationship with Mu Yazhe for quite some time.

He was only asking now to give her a chance to come clean for once. He did not want her to hide the truth from him anymore.

“Eh! He’s... your daddy,” she announced slowly, carefully studying his expression. His calmness gave her a start.

“Why aren’t you surprised?”

“Why should I?” He held his head calmly. “In fact, I also know the uncle’s name is Mu Yazhe, and that he is the CEO of Disheng Financial Group. Besides that...”

He drew close to her and elbowed her waist. “That uncle seems to really like you!”

She was a little embarrassed as she pinched his tender cheeks.

Chapter 487: Sons’ Rights to Spoil Their Mothers

“What does a child like you know of ‘like’?”

“Of course, I know. Mommy, you’re really lagging at times. Some elementary students are already looking for their love interests. Mommy is truly getting on in years; you’re almost out of sync with our generation.”

Getting on in years...

These four words penetrated her heart straightaway!

She glared at him admonishingly.

“Are you despising that mommy is getting old?”

He shrugged, sizing her up generously. Thereafter, he patted her shoulder in earnest.

(vit(function()){)

“Mommy, relax! No matter how old you get, even when all your teeth are gone and your hair turns white, Youyou won’t despise you!”

Touched by his words, she firmly placed two smooches on his smiling face as she cupped it with her hands. “Be good, and you’re banned from despising mommy! Mommy loves Youyou the most!”

All of a sudden, he encompassed her shoulders with his arms as he crooned in his youthful, warm voice, “Do you know that Youyou is strongly possessive of mommy? Youyou hopes that no one will take mommy away, but if mommy approves of someone, whatever decision mommy makes, as long as it will make mommy happy, Youyou will wholeheartedly support it. That is enough for Youyou!”

This was despite disliking Mu Yazhe for causing his mommy to have that forlorn look yesterday.

He knew the culprit for it could only be the man!

While he did not know exactly why, he understood that one would not feel sad because of another if the former did not have feelings for the latter.

His mother was clearly in love with that man!

Since everything had progressed to this, he would not force his ideals on Yun Shishi.

Whatever her decision was, he would stand by her unconditionally!

This was simply because she was his most beloved mother.

Her gaze softened in that instant and she hugged his shoulders while gently stroking his head with a smile. “Youyou is so well-behaved! No matter what happens, Youyou should remember that mommy loves him the most!”

“Anyway, if someone bullies mommy, mommy must tell Youyou to return the favor!” He held his head aloft and pecked his mommy’s cheek; his beautiful eyes contained all his adoration and love for her.

She was moved.

Sometimes, he could truly give her the wrong impression.

Although this boy was her son, his love for her was akin to a person’s love for the other half.

“Aren’t Youyou afraid of spoiling mommy from loving me too much?” she asked, grinning.

His rosy lips compressed in clear disapproval. “What are you saying? Isn’t it the sons’ rights to spoil their mothers?”

“People will surely label you as a mommy’s boy when you grow up!”

“Let them be, then!” He snorted scornfully with a haughty look.

“Need I, Yun Tianyou, act according to others’ wishes?”

“B*llshit!” She tussled his silky hair.

He nestled within her arms in satisfaction.

Suddenly, she sternly asked, “Youyou, sometimes this comes to mommy’s mind; who exactly did you inherit your genes from?”

He was quirky and witty, as well as a sweetheart, yet he was also frank – he was simply a smarty pants!

He replied with certainty, “Of course, I inherited these genes from my dearest mommy! Mommy looks so beautiful and, despite being a dummy, has Youyou! Since I’m smart, everything will be fine!”

“You said mommy is a dummy again!” Pinching his cheeks, she feigned annoyance and indignation.

Chapter 488: He Will Take Care of Mommy Instead

“Youyou actually despises that mommy is a dummy. Mommy is sad. Oh...”

He repeatedly begged for forgiveness. “Oh, dear. Gentler, gentler!”

She, however, did not let him off easily and even daunted him.

“Quickly praise mommy; say that I’m smart!”

“Mommy is so smart!”

“Anything else?”

“Mommy is a pretty goddess!”

“Keep going; keep going!”

(vit(function())())

“Mommy is the sweetest in the entire world!” He praised her wittily.

Only after those words had left his mouth did she decide to let him off. She could not control her fingers from poking at his head.

“Consider yourself smart!”

“Oh, dear, mommy. Hurry and eat; Youyou will go put away the laundry!” He rushed her at the same time he jumped out of her arms and stumped toward the balcony.

She lifted her chopsticks in satisfaction, deep emotions stirring within her. Having a filial son around, everything would be all right!

Come to think of it; she was a little ashamed of herself.

Thus, after she was done having her dinner, she brought the utensils into the kitchen and washed them herself.

Youyou put the clothes in the wardrobe and tactfully entered the kitchen with a bench. Placing himself beside her, he said, “Mommy, let’s wash the dishes together!”

“Okay.”

“Let’s distribute the work: you wash the dishes and I wipe them dry.”

“Okay.”

The mother-son pair chatted in a carefree manner while they washed the dishes.

Once they were done washing the dishes, the two sat on the sofa to watch some shows on TV. This was when he thought of her movie. Out of curiosity, he popped a question. “Mommy, when is the movie you are starring going to begin filming?”

“It’s the day after tomorrow, I think!” she recalled. “We’ll be holding a kickoff ceremony at Jinhua University.”

“Can Youyou tag along?”

“No. You have school,” she rejected unhesitatingly.

“Oh... Bad mommy!”

“You have school tomorrow; go to sleep.” She turned off the TV and carried him into the bedroom.

She then placed him in bed, the latter still looking annoyed. He pouted his lips and was clearly unhappy.

“Darling, mommy has to work. Since I can’t take care of you, mommy will worry.” She coaxed him helplessly.

“Fine! Your darling will behave and go to school.” Although he was very dissatisfied with this outcome, there was nothing he could do. Taking his time, he snuggled into the blanket and appeared to be in low spirits.

He wanted to be with her, or he would feel uneasy.

He thought, perhaps, he should confess everything to her. That way, she could stay at home and not work anymore. He would rather take care of her, lest she be treated with disdain or be edged out at work. She could keep her from suffering alone.

He was worried.

How could he set his mind at ease when she worked in a place full of schemers and liars like the entertainment industry?

On second thought, he was entirely clueless on how to divulge certain truths to her, so he eventually shoved down his throat his urge to confess everything to her.

Noticing his despondence, she gently kissed his pouty lips and comforted, “Don’t worry too much. Good night, darling!”

His complexion then seemed to lighten a bit. “Good night, mommy! Sweet dreams.”

She turned off the lights and shut the door.

She then returned to her room and lay in her bed, yet for some reason, sleep completely eluded her.

Her phone suddenly rang. Holding it up, she saw the lit screen flash ‘Mu Yazhe’.

Caught in a daze, she recalled when they had bumped into each other at the hospital. There was a lump in her throat even now. She tapped the screen to reject his call in her frustration.

Within a few seconds, her phone rang again. She hung up right away.

Chapter 489: Come Here And Let Me Hug You

Her phone rang time after time, seemingly testing her patience. Going back and forth between her hanging up and him calling again, her fury sprang into life. She eventually accepted the call and snapped, “What are you trying to do?!”

“Get out!” Having over 20 calls of his being rejected by her, his voice was similarly filled with resentment.

She was confused and asked in distaste, “What are you barking at in the middle of the night?”

“I’m outside your house.”

She rushed to the window and was shocked to see an Aston Martin parked outside. Mu Yazhe was supporting a phone to his ear and leaning his rangy figure against the hood of his car. He had a cigarette held at the corner of his lips.

The flickering and imperishable flames on his stick were particularly striking in this darkness.

Gazing from afar, the man had his head inclined, and his entire being radiated an indefinable loneliness.

(vit(function())())

For some reason, the him now was stripped off his past high feather and appeared a little distressed. This sight somehow pierced through her heart.

She ended the call and returned to her bed. This time, her ringtone did not buzz anew. She was baffled by this.

Was he gone ?

She felt an inexplicable unease spread in her heart, and before she could think further on her action, she was already beside the window once again. She lifted a corner of the curtains and looked in to the distance, only to see him still present. Besides smoking a new stick, his posture was unchanged.

He seemed rather distressed tonight as he lit up one cigarette after another.

He took a drag on his smoke and raised his head in her direction.

She put down the curtain in a hurry, her heartbeat becoming slightly irregular.

She hesitated for a while, then she finally put on an outerwear and headed outside.

The passing late-night breeze sent a chill coursing through her body.

Feeling a little uneasy, she stood at the door and lightly tugged at her clothes. She glanced over at the man leaning against the front of his car. A long silence was held between them.

Seemingly a century later, she spoke.

“Why are you here?”

He peered at her face; his eyes were indecipherable as he stayed silent.

“If you have nothing to say, then I’m going back in!” she said in a fit of pique. Turning around and pushing the door open, she was about to enter her house when his voice rang out. “Stay there!”

She stopped her steps but did not turn to face him.

He straightened his posture and stubbed out his cigarette. He then spoke in a rather hoarse voice. “Come over and let me hug you!”

Her back stiffened a little. She spun around in a daze but did not go striding over to him.

What was the meaning of this?

He suddenly appeared in front of her house looking frail and looked as if he could not withstand a single blow. Did he do all this just to solicit a hug from her?

“You...”

“Come over and let me hug you,” he reiterated with a hint of compromise in his voice. “Five minutes will do!”

She pondered on it for a while and eventually made her way to him.

She had just arrived before him when he stretched his arm out and drew her into his chest. He hugged her tightly.

His arms increasingly tightened around her, and he appeared to be quite in a frenzy. It was as though he were dying to fuse her into his blood and bones; his embrace was nearly suffocating!

Feeling a little uncomfortable, she struggled a little.

His forbearing voice reverberated from the crown of her head at this point. “Don’t move!”

“Mu Yazhe...”

She lifted her eyes, just in time to see his handsome face inch close to hers.

Chapter 490: His Explanation

She lifted her eyes just in time to see his handsome face inch close to hers. His thin lips forcefully suppressed her protest by covering her mouth!

His behavior, akin to an injured beast, was out of control tonight.

It might be due to this day being his mother’s death anniversary that, after paying his respects at the columbarium, he was unusually irked.

Earlier tonight, he took his car for a spin on the mountain to vent his frustration. Unknowingly, he drove straight to her place after he left the hinterland.

By the time he became rational of his deed, the car was already stalled and parked outside her house.

Only then did he acknowledge that she had unknowingly crept her way into his heart.

He wanted to see her badly, but his pride would not let him admit defeat to a woman!

(vit(function())())

Thus, for the past few days, he had plunged himself into a heavy workload to distract his thoughts away from her.

Still, he thought of her each time he shut his eyes.

Whatever he was doing, her face would appear in his mind.

He had waited for her to seek him. Instead, she had disappeared from his world without a trace!

Thus, when he found himself at her doorstep, he knew he had lost to her.

He was unable to withstand not seeing her.

His orbs deepened at this realization. Without waiting for her reaction, his domineering kiss conquered her entire oral cavity!

Her heart jerked in shock at the ferocity of his kiss; it was as if he wanted to swallow her alive!

His cool lip flaps stuck heavily on hers, crushing her in the process. He took this chance to forcefully open her mouth and suckle the sweetness between her teeth.

“Erm...”

She struggled and resisted in vain. His powerful grip was not something she could wrestle against.

“Erm...”

The kiss ventured further in, almost to the extent of suffocation.

Just as she was close to passing out, the man pinched her chin to admire her ruddy lips, which were freshly assaulted by him. His eyes expressed surprise when he brushed her hair aside with his slender fingers.

“Where are the earrings?”

She breathlessly scrutinized his unhappy face and replied coolly, “I removed them!”

“Why did you remove them?” he asked, somewhat infuriated.

“I don’t like them anymore; that’s why.” Finding his question ludicrous, she turned to walk away.

He reached out and tugged on her arm.

She fell backward and banged against the car door unsteadily.

He quickly pinned her with his broad frame against the car.

She helplessly looked up, only to see him shooting daggers at her.

“What do you want exactly?”

“Are you still mad at me?” he asked out of the blue.

Momentarily stunned, she looked away and answered, “I don’t know what you are talking about.”

“Song Enya,” he explained, “is my niece. There’s nothing between us. If you have misgivings about our relationship, then let me tell you that it’s redundant!”

He had apparently put down his pride and dignity to explain everything to her. If this was why she was upset with him, then he would clarify to her about his niece!

Chapter 491: Do you dare to declare it to the world?

He only doted on his niece because she reminded him of his mother.

However, this was not something she would need to mind about!

She was stunned for a while.

Was this man trying to clarify things to her?

Niece, he said?

Are they uncle and niece?

Still, why did she see the kind of adoration a woman would show a man she liked in his niece's eyes?

(vit(function()){)

They might have that kind of blood connection, but how could he not tell that his so-called niece looked at him amorously?

She snorted. "Why should I be angry?"

Her indifference truly antagonized him!

Suppressing his temper, he hissed, "You really did mind about this!"

Her silence confirmed his suspicion.

Hence, he made a great concession. "If that bothers you, then I'll keep a distance from her!"

The corner of her lips tugged slightly, albeit her voice remained neutral. "I'm not qualified for you to do that for me."

He could not stand to hear that and vehemently corrected her. "You have the rights!"

"I don't have!"

"D*mn!"

Grabbing her chin with his thumb and index finger, he lowered his head to bite her lip flap out of frustration.

He really loved and hated this woman!

Her presumptuous nature especially infuriated him!

What did she mean by she had no rights? She had when he said so!

“Ouch!” She jumped in pain and pushed against his chest, only to invite his rebuttal. “If I say that you have the rights, that means you have!”

“Mu Yazhe, don’t you find yourself arrogant?! Do you really think that I’m bothered by that?” Her eyes gleamed coldly and sharply. “What if I’m bothered? Tell me, then; in what ways am I qualified?!”

The man kept quiet for a change.

When he merely looked at her, she snorted wryly. “What status do I have to interfere with your personal life?”

“You are my woman, and that gives you every right!” he domineeringly declared.

She was stunned for a while before letting out a sneer in return. “If I’m yours, do you dare to declare about us to the world?”

His face sank at her words.

Her heart took a great beating when she saw his bewildered look.

See; our relationship is something that can’t see the light!

What she wanted was a stable life that came with a happy marriage and not a relationship that must be kept a secret!

She would never let herself become a third party in a relationship!

She would not tolerate the thought of being cast in a despicable role even if his relationship with his fiancée was only in name.

She opened her mouth to speak at this thought. “See; you can’t even meet this demand. Mu Yazhe, please recognize your status and stop looking for me...”

“If that’s what you really want...” The corners of his lips flared up after a pause. “Yun Shishi, I’ll let you become my woman through the proper channel!”

It was her turn to stare at him in disbelief this time.

It was... unbelievable.

“I’ll declare to the whole world that you are my woman!”

He would do that when the time was ripe.

Currently, the political situation inside the Mu family was at the height of its chaos. With his grandfather’s health deteriorating every day, the power struggle had grown fiercer. Some lost their patience, deeming that this was the time for a power change.

If he were to announce her status in his life now, his enemies might harm her to get to him.

Chapter 492: I Will Declare It to the World

Once he ascended as the head of the Mu family.

Once he wielded the highest power in the Mu family.

Once he eradicated those enemies in the Mu's extended family.

Once that day came, he would declare to the world that Yun Shishi was his woman!

This was his promise to her.

Did he mean... that he would give her a home?

She suddenly had a lump in her throat.

(vit(function())()

She thought that happiness was something out of her reach.

Although having a complete family was normal for others, it was something so far off to her.

Right now, this man was telling her that she would one day be his woman.

His legitimate woman.

Was this what he meant?

“Would that day come?” She was somehow in disbelief.

Feeling rather infuriated, he countered, “Woman, are you doubting me?”

She stared at him blankly. Her face was devoid of any emotion in that moment.

A needle seemed to have pierced through his heart as he looked at her.

“Mu Yazhe, answer me; do you love me?”

She fixed her gaze on to his face as she popped this question to him.

He was suddenly out of words.

He was a bit unclear on how he should define ‘love’. He had never been in a relationship before, and Yun Shishi, in whichever form, was his only woman ever.

He was all along arrogant and carefree; he was akin to the wind in that he disliked being restrained.

However, ever since this woman entered his world, everything seemed to have lost their order.

He was also getting used to having her warmth in his bed.

He was a little uncomfortable without her.

He had such a strong possessive streak over her; he disliked other men looking at her and touching her. She could only be his.

He would miss her like crazy when she was not around.

He would miss her eyes, he would miss her tightly knitted brows, he would miss her coquettish protests, and he would miss her shy, budding look underneath him.

He longed to gaze at her peaceful countenance when she was fast asleep while snuggling on his bent elbow.

If this meant that he loved her, then he would admit that he was in love.

He was simply embarrassed to say that statement aloud.

Thus, he answered her by dipping his head and planting a gentle kiss on her lips.

This kiss was void of any of his previous storms; the man just lightly pecked at her lips, just like a dragonfly skimming the surface of the water.

Treating her like the most precious treasure in the world, he carefully held her in his arms.

Gingerly, she reciprocated his kiss and latched hers on to his shoulders. He was very satisfied at her slightly clumsy yet aggressive response. He tightened his grip on her and deepened the kiss.

The two, who were caught up with their intimacies, were unaware of a lean figure standing by a window behind them.

Yun Tianyou stood sideways before the window in his pajamas. With his hand raising a corner of the curtain and him peeking out, he witnessed that amorous scene fully. Mixed feelings appeared on his handsome and youthful face.

He might be young and inexperienced about the affairs of love between adults, but he could sense that his dumb mommy was in love.

He could feel the love his mommy had for that man.

A sudden streak of loneliness fled across his eyes, and following that, a corner of his lips lightly pulled up.

He clenched his hands into fists and gently hammered his slightly aching chest with them.

If one day his mommy told him that she was in love with the man, he would accept the man as his father without hesitation!

However, this did not mean that he would sit idly by if this man ever bullied his mommy!

Chapter 493: Film It or Scram

Returning to his bed, Yun Tianyou nestled in his blanket and lifted the small yet intricate photo frame from the night table. The photo was taken when he was with his mommy at the amusement park a few days ago!

He pressed the frame firmly onto his chest and quietly went to sleep.

The next morning.

After Yun Shishi woke up and washed herself, she headed to the dining room and saw that her son had already laid out breakfast on

the table. Yun Yecheng quickly greeted her. “Shishi, good morning!”

“Dad, Youyou, good morning!”

“Mommy, hurry up and have your breakfast.” The little lad pulled out a chair for her and, with a gentleman’s bow, invited her to sit down.

She laughed at his antics as she occupied the seat.

(vit(function()())

He walked over to her side and asked with a smile, “Mommy, did you have a good sleep last night?”

His question startled her. Recalling that kiss the night before, she answered as a blush came to her face, “Mm! I had a pleasant sleep!”

He grinned. “That’s great! Youyou had a nightmare though.”

“Hm?”

“It’s nothing! Dumb mommy, hurry with your breakfast! This is a sunny side up Youyou fried with love for you!” With that said, he placed a plate before her. In it was the fried egg in the shape of a heart he had made with care.

“Have you had breakfast yet?”

“Dumb mommy, what’s the time now? I have to go report to the kindergarten!” He dissed her.

Once he recalled those chattering and prancing imps he had to face at the kindergarten, distress could be seen written all over the little boy's face.

Depressing. Absolutely depressing.

He felt that his IQ would plummet if he continued to study at that kindergarten for a few more years.

Yun Yecheng said, "Shishi, hurry up and go to work after finishing your breakfast! I'll send Youyou to the kindergarten!"

"Mm! Be careful on your way there."

Her father, thus, left with her son.

A few days back, she bought a car for Yun Yecheng. He had not driven a car for years after his company's bankruptcy. Still, he tried getting used to driving the car, and within a few days, he was more or less running it smoothly.

As the vehicle exited the entrance to the house, a black limousine followed it closely.

After that incident at the theme park, Li Hanlin specially arranged for bodyguards to protect Youyou twenty-four seven.

Back in the house, once Yun Shishi was done with breakfast, she hurried to leave as well.

In the company, Lin Fengtian sat in his office with a few assistant directors standing at one side of the room; they were trembling in fear and breaking out into a cold sweat.

Qin Zhou sat on the sofa and filed his nails indifferently.

At this moment, the spacious office was shrouded in a frigid air.

“How do we film?! How do we film this?!” Lin Fengtian slammed his large palms on the surface of the table. On the table was an injunction order issued to him.

An impressive list of rules regarding Yun Shishi’s scenes was printed on it.

No kissing scenes.

No bed scenes.

No hugging scenes.

No holding hands scenes.

Skimming through the list, he nearly spluttered up blood from his rage!

These edicts were especially issued by Mu Yazhe. Still, among all those listed down, just those four mentioned above were enough for this director to go crazy.

“How do we film this?! HOW! Is Mr. Mu out of his mind?!”

When he held this injunction order to Mu Yazhe and tried to reason with him in every possible way, the latter simply said indifferently, “Film it or scram.”

“Shh!” Qin Zhou attempted to calm him down. “Director Lin, calm down! You’re in Mr. Mu’s territory, yet you dare say that about him?”

Lin Fengtian felt as if he was going to have a stroke.

No form of intimacy was allowed during the shooting. Was one to find a stand-in for a relationship?

Was this still considered as filming a movie?

Chapter 494: Regaining Her Memories 1

Was a stand-in needed to film this teen movie for a peck on the lips or an act of holding hands?

“Do I have to borrow someone else’s lips for the kissing scenes and someone else’s hands for the holding hands scenes?! Why is it so troublesome to film this movie?!”

Qin Zhou corrected him right away. “We have to find two stand-ins! Xingze stated before that he is squeamish about kissing and holding hands with others just for a shooting. That’s why we must find a few stand-ins for him too.”

Upon hearing that, Lin Fengtian’s blood instantly boiled. “Rascals!”

He had no way of venting his rage except for swearing simply because Mu Yazhe was the one who had issued the injunction order.

Money was not a problem.

Huanyu had the capital, and he could spend it freely.

(vit(function()){)

However, if he violated any rule on the injunction order, the movie would be called off.

Qin Zhou stroked his chin. He had a notion that something quite intriguing was going on between Yun Shishi and Mu Yazhe.

“Who is this Yun Shishi for Mr. Mu to take great care of her?” An assistant director thought that it was suspicious.

“‘Take care’? Is this taking care?! OH, PLEASE! I edited the scenarios for the kissing scenes repeatedly, and just when I was piecing them together, two stand-ins would be ruining them!” Lin Fengtian was having a headache.

The thought of using stand-ins to film his meticulously edited kissing scenes rendered him heartbroken.

He was quite fond of Yun Shishi and thought that she had the potential. Perhaps, upon the screening of the movie, she could become the next Han Yuyan.

No. She could surely surpass her!

It took 10 years to grind a sword. Lin Fengtian was very confident in this movie. Being funded heavily and having a top-production crew, coupled with Gu Xingze’s popularity, Lin Fengtian had expectations that this movie would break world records in the film industry!

However, with the countless restrictions placed on him by Mu Yazhe, his hands and feet were truly bound!

He could not contain his anger, but what could he do? What else could be done?

Who was Mu Yazhe? He was the sole heir to Disheng Financial Group. Everyone in the company depended on him for their livelihood. What was the use of resisting?

Thus, even as he cursed the man for being unkind, he still hurried to look for stand-ins.

Qin Zhou invited Yun Shishi for lunch in a Chinese restaurant.

As they sat together, he explained the issue to her.

She was quite astonished by his explanation. “Mu Yazhe ordered that?”

Shocked as she was, she was still delighted at his possessiveness.

“Mm! Director Lin was fuming so much he almost had a stroke!” he affirmed.

She did not know whether to laugh or cry. “Is it that serious?”

“Shishi, let me ask you; what is your relationship with Mr. Mu? I noticed that he’s really concerned for you.” Being a little nosy, he tried to fish for details from her.

“Mr. Qin, you’re quite nosy, aren’t you?”

“Being nosy is instinctive when working in this industry.”

While the two exchanged pleasantries, a waiter laid out the dishes successively. Unfortunately, her dress was splashed with some tea.

The waiter immediately turned pale from fright and repeatedly expressed his apologies. “I’m sorry; I’m sorry! It was an accident!”

“Forget it. It’s no big deal.” She waved off his apologies.

Fortunately, she was wearing a black dress today, so it did not matter much.

She excused herself to Qin Zhou before she got up to clean her dress in the washroom.

...

“Wanrou, you don’t look good lately. Did you not get a good rest?”

In the washroom, Mu Wanrou touched up her makeup with her focus on her reflection. Beside her was Aaron who lightly pecked at her ear and circled her waist.

Chapter 495: Regaining Her Memories 2

Mu Wanrou forcibly elbowed him once and emotionlessly cautioned, “Let me warn you; don’t get too touchy with me when we are outside, lest others see us!”

“I know.” Aaron took half a step back and reluctantly maintained a distance from her. He leaned against the wall and glanced at her back in silence – he was still satisfied with this!

Meanwhile, she sent a glare at him; she thought that her biggest mistake was getting involved with this man!

He was unlikely to leave her alone.

She wanted a clean breakup with him, but if she were to do so, she knew he would spill her secrets; thus, she unwillingly retained her relationship with him.

She would take a step at a time.

When the time was right, she would then eliminate him to avoid future problems!

(vit(function())())

She studied herself in the mirror again. Although the face being reflected wore a thick layer of makeup, it could hardly conceal her haggardness.

Her mind was slightly unhinged these past few days, so she was unable to have a good rest. Plagued by nightmares, she tossed and turned in her sleep.

She kept having an ominous foreboding!

Her face showed terrifying anger at the thought of this.

Those trashes!

She could not fathom how they failed to handle a mere six-year-old.

He was only a child of six with meager strength in his arms... yet they still failed to assassinate him! What was more horrifying was that her hired killer had gone missing without a trace!

At first, she was worried of her plan being uncovered, but even after a few days, it remained unreported. Her uneasiness did not abate though.

Having failed this time, she could only conjure up another plan. She was simply afraid of alerting others with this failure; moreover, it would be much more difficult to lay her hands on Yun Shishi next time.

She had a reason for being desperate to eliminate that mother-child pair.

Old Mu's health was deteriorating by the day. Thus, he was all the more frantic to find those with Mu's bloodline living outside.

Yun Tianyou mattered not to her.

He was a mere child, and he was still immature; how much of a threat could he pose to her?

She was wholly blasé about him.

Alas, he had great rapport with Yun Shishi. If he were to return, the latter would be able to stir stuff up with the Mu family, right?

If that were to happen, even the smallest action could reveal her identity; she would then be completely done for.

As such, she must eradicate those two thorns in her flesh before Grandpa Mu could do anything!

Looking at herself in the mirror, she went ahead to apply her lip tint and evenly spread the color out before she returned it to her bag. Her face suddenly grimaced, and bending over the vanity table, she painfully retched.

“Urgh...”

Aaron’s face sank. He immediately went forward and aided her by holding her arm. “What’s the matter?” he nervously asked.

“Nothing...” She tried pushing him away, but before she could continue, she gagged again.

She constantly felt queasy, but nothing came out as vomit; she just inexplicably retched in extreme discomfort.

When she tried to push him away, he felt defeated, but seeing her start to heave anew, he hesitantly went ahead to support her again.

She did not push him back this time; perhaps it was due to her being unable to keep her balance.

He noted her repeatedly surging back and furrowed his brows. “Is your gastritis acting up again?”

“Probably!” She raised her eyes to look at the mirror; she looked terrible.

“I’ll go buy some medicine for you!”

“No need.” She leaned her feeble body against him and massaged her chest. “I’m feeling much better now. It must be due to me not eating breakfast, so...”

Chapter 496: Regaining Her Memories 3

“No need.” She leaned her feeble body against him and massaged her chest. “I’m feeling much better now. It must be due to me not eating breakfast, so...”

“Why aren’t you taking good care of yourself?” Aaron caressed her face lovingly.

Mu Wanrou clutched at her chest, as she still felt the unfathomable urge to gag.

She lifted her gaze in fatigue to the mirror, only to see from her peripheral the presence of another person. Apparently, this someone had been standing there for a while now. Her back reflexively stiffened as her countenance fell; she then hastily shoved the man away.

Aaron, who had failed to catch on to the situation in time, noticed her turn around with a wan face and stare directly ahead. His eyes wonderingly followed her line of sight to his back and spotted Yun Shishi rooted to the spot at the washroom’s entrance. Yun Shishi’s facial expression was entirely frozen, and her eyes darted between them.

Mu Wanrou?

Why is she with this man?

(vit(function()){})

She visited the washroom to clean the tea stain on her dress, but once she arrived at the door, the scene of the two affectionately huddling together came into her sight. From her angle, Aaron's hand was visibly stroking the side of Mu Wanrou's waist.

She was even more startled about...

... Her retching just then. Could it be morning sickness?

Mu Wanrou was probably inexperienced on this, so she did not know what this entailed.

Being pregnant for 10 months with Youyou and Yichen, Yun Shishi's morning sickness had been severe. Thus, she easily associated Mu Wanrou's vomiting to the latter having morning sickness.

Is she... pregnant?

This conjecture gave her a thorough shock it caused a chill to form in her chest.

How is that possible?

She clearly recalled this woman being congenitally infertile! It was impossible for her to get pregnant. Therefore, back then, the Mus had hired a surrogate mother at a sky-high price to continue their family lineage.

However... that retching just then, if it were not morning sickness, then what was it?

She took a peek at her complexion; her eyes were floating around, and she looked terrible. Her heart immediately sank at the sight.

Could she really be pregnant?

Noting her unusual expression, Mu Wanrou knitted her brows. She had a guilty conscience, but at the reminder of this b*tch being a constant threat to her position, a twisted wrath surfaced from within her heart.

She sneered and emotionlessly spouted, “B*tch, what are you looking at?!”

Yun Shishi ignored her hostility and blankly stated, “You both seem to be rather close...”

A streak of frenzy crossed Aaron’s features. He quickly shifted half a step back before he explained to her right off the bat, “I noticed that Young Madame Mu is not feeling very well, so I went to her out of concern.”

She observed him salvaging the situation. This ‘Young Madame Mu’ was simply pleasant to her ears. She held her head aloft and revealed an elegant smile.

What if this b*tch had the ability to seduce others? She was the young mistress of the Mu family now. She was Mu Yazhe’s fiancée!

A woman like her was nothing more than a pastime to Mu Yazhe. Once he grew tired of her, he would surely discard her away without a care.

He was a man. Could she not be more knowledgeable about this stuff?

Sooner or later, this thorn in her flesh would be gone!

It was a simple stroke of luck that this b*tch managed to escape this time. Next time, she would definitely be more decisive in her ruthlessness!

Yun Shishi lightly tugged at the corner of her lips and asked, “Since you’re aware that she’s Young Madame Mu, don’t you think that this ‘concern’ of yours is a bit too much?”

Guilt burgeoned in Mu Wanrou’s eyes in that instant, but she quickly suppressed it inside, and then she shot her a cold glare at once!

Chapter 497: Regaining Her Memories 4

Guilt burgeoned in Mu Wanrou’s eyes in that instant, but she quickly suppressed it inside, and then she shot her a cold glare at once. Taking large strides to her, she raised her hand high and swatted it across her face!

SMACK!

Yun Shishi was unable to avoid her hand in time and reeled back from the impact.

A red and swollen imprint emerged on her face right away.

With a blank gaze, she touched her scalding cheek and glared at her in slight disbelief.

“B*tch, what are you looking at?! You should also be familiar to the concept of ‘too much’! Aren’t you just a reincarnation of a vixen spirit? Looking innocent and harmless... You’re actually a vile creature!”

She spouted that through gritted teeth. The rage and wrath in her eyes seemingly yearned to grind her bones into ashes!

(vit(function())())

Yun Shishi was triggered by her bold and careless remark. A shade of fury crept into her eyes. “On what grounds do you call me vile?!”

“You dare to rebut?!” she demanded. She was about to send another slap to her face, but Yun Shishi gripped her wrist tightly and returned her a tight slap.

SMACK!

Mu Wanrou staggered a few steps backward and almost fell over from her retaliation.

Aaron rushed to support her body before she could fall completely. He threw an intense glare over at Yun Shishi. “What are you doing?!”

“She hit me first; I’m just returning the favor,” she replied with composure. There was no sign of fear on her face.

Mu Wanrou hovered a hand over her swollen cheek. Her eyes brimmed with tears of indignation as she glared fixedly at her.

She badly wanted to show her what she was made of again, but before she could take a step forward, a strong urge to gag surged from within her chest. She gripped her clothes and stopped her steps, contenting herself with staring fiercely at Yun Shishi.

“A slut is always a slut – born to be vile!”

Yun Shishi was shocked when she heard that.

A white light seemingly flashed past her mind.

Memories deeply buried within her repeatedly surged forth before her eyes.

Among her fragmented memories, there was one which showed a beautifully dressed girl, akin to a haughty princess, shoving her down. She pointed at her and spat in a condescending manner, “A slut is always a slut – born to be vile!”

She suddenly felt a splitting headache.

Something seemed to be trying to break through from her head.

She massaged between her brows to ease the slight pain there and glanced at Mu Wanrou’s mean and twisted features with her cold and empty eyes. Her thoughts spun inside her head...

15 years ago—

From what she could remember, since a young age, she had never met her father once. She had the impression that her mother was a natural femme fatale though.

She had a younger brother as well. In her memories, the three of them relied on each other to survive.

Although they were in financial straits and were faced with many difficulties, she felt that their time together was the happiest moment of her life.

She returned home to her mother and younger brother's presence. She loved lying with her brother in the bed. Meanwhile, their mother would open a fairy-tale book and read the story in it to them word for word in a gentle voice.

Her gentle voice lulled the siblings to sleep.

Alas, that peaceful time was smashed apart when she was nine years old.

A car accident caused an already fragmented family to be completely damned into hell.

In that accident, if her mother had not protected her, she would not have lived; at the same time, if her mother had not protected her, her mother and brother would not have died.

That accident was beyond horrendous – the driver fled along with the plummeting of the vehicle to the bottom of the mountain. It was a catastrophic car crash.

Chapter 497: Regaining Her Memories 4

Guilt burgeoned in Mu Wanrou's eyes in that instant, but she quickly suppressed it inside, and then she shot her a cold glare at once. Taking large strides to her, she raised her hand high and swatted it across her face!

SMACK!

Yun Shishi was unable to avoid her hand in time and reeled back from the impact.

A red and swollen imprint emerged on her face right away.

With a blank gaze, she touched her scalding cheek and glared at her in slight disbelief.

“B*tch, what are you looking at?! You should also be familiar to the concept of ‘too much’! Aren’t you just a reincarnation of a vixen spirit? Looking innocent and harmless... You’re actually a vile creature!”

She spouted that through gritted teeth. The rage and wrath in her eyes seemingly yearned to grind her bones into ashes!

(vit(function())())

Yun Shishi was triggered by her bold and careless remark. A shade of fury crept into her eyes. “On what grounds do you call me vile?!”

“You dare to rebut?!” she demanded. She was about to send another slap to her face, but Yun Shishi gripped her wrist tightly and returned her a tight slap.

SMACK!

Mu Wanrou staggered a few steps backward and almost fell over from her retaliation.

Aaron rushed to support her body before she could fall completely. He threw an intense glare over at Yun Shishi. “What are you doing?!”

“She hit me first; I’m just returning the favor,” she replied with composure. There was no sign of fear on her face.

Mu Wanrou hovered a hand over her swollen cheek. Her eyes brimmed with tears of indignation as she glared fixedly at her.

She badly wanted to show her what she was made of again, but before she could take a step forward, a strong urge to gag surged from within her chest. She gripped her clothes and stopped her steps, contenting herself with staring fiercely at Yun Shishi.

“A slut is always a slut – born to be vile!”

Yun Shishi was shocked when she heard that.

A white light seemingly flashed past her mind.

Memories deeply buried within her repeatedly surged forth before her eyes.

Among her fragmented memories, there was one which showed a beautifully dressed girl, akin to a haughty princess, shoving her down. She pointed at her and spat in a condescending manner, “A slut is always a slut – born to be vile!”

She suddenly felt a splitting headache.

Something seemed to be trying to break through from her head.

She massaged between her brows to ease the slight pain there and glanced at Mu Wanrou’s mean and twisted features with her cold and empty eyes. Her thoughts spun inside her head...

15 years ago—

From what she could remember, since a young age, she had never met her father once. She had the impression that her mother was a natural femme fatale though.

She had a younger brother as well. In her memories, the three of them relied on each other to survive.

Although they were in financial straits and were faced with many difficulties, she felt that their time together was the happiest moment of her life.

She returned home to her mother and younger brother’s presence. She loved lying with her brother in the bed. Meanwhile, their mother would open a fairy-tale book and read the story in it to them word for word in a gentle voice.

Her gentle voice lulled the siblings to sleep.

Alas, that peaceful time was smashed apart when she was nine years old.

A car accident caused an already fragmented family to be completely damned into hell.

In that accident, if her mother had not protected her, she would not have lived; at the same time, if her mother had not protected her, her mother and brother would not have died.

That accident was beyond horrendous – the driver fled along with the plummeting of the vehicle to the bottom of the mountain. It was a catastrophic car crash.

Chapter 498: Regaining Her Memories 5

She hurriedly struggled loose of the car and dragged her brother out. The car then burned down completely.

She passed out from her dire injuries right after.

She regained consciousness to a few minor injuries and to her younger brother missing.

Her mother was eventually pronounced dead.

With the coroner's report in one hand and her broken arm in the other, she watched her mother be pushed to the cold morgue. She followed woodenly behind without shedding a single tear.

She seemed to forget how to cry.

Her mother did not have any friends when she was alive, so her funeral was hastily arranged by a few good Samaritans who had taken pity on her.

(vit(function())())

She forgot how she had endured through the subsequent month in a hospital.

Her heart had turned numb at that point. Still, she only fully realized that she would be alone from then onward on the day of her hospital discharge.

Other than a piece of jade, she had nothing of her mother.

She recalled her mother carrying the jade with her at all times and never keeping it away.

She did not mention a word of her past to her daughter, though.

She did recall how much her mother had hated her father and grandfather's origin. Still, even though not much was spoken about them, she knew that they were rich people.

She also remembered her mother holding a deep-seated grudge against a man named Mu Sheng to the point of calling him a cruel butcher.

While her mother did mention the Mu family, the number of times could be counted with one hand.

She kept mum about the two siblings' father, however.

Since she did not have any relatives, after some paperwork, she was sent to a private orphanage.

The place ended up becoming her lifelong nightmare.

That was probably the darkest period of her life, and because she never wanted to revisit that past, she was subjected to a selective memory loss. The memory of that place had turned hazy.

This was until Mu Wanrou's 'a slut is always a slut – born to be vile' retort brought back her memories of the forgotten past. Finally, she could recall a girl who used to curse her with those exact words back then.

...

After she had reached the orphanage, she was quickly assigned to a room.

The room of about 20 square meters was considered crowded with 16 children occupying eight double decks in it.

A pretty girl called Rou'er was sharing a bed with her. Just like the rest, this girl yearned to be adopted by a rich family.

Different from the other children, she recalled this girl always looking beautiful and outstanding. She was often decked in pretty frocks and was frequently holding candies and snacks. Her mannerism was akin to a highly regarded, pampered princess.

The orphanage director and teachers doted on her, and she even had a huge following among the children.

She was like a fairy the way she was showered with love and affection.

Back then, Yun Shishi was still agonizing over the loss of her mother. Her reclusive and autistic behavior repelled the rest. No one liked to play or be with her.

That girl was the first to reach out to her. When she was feeling helpless and hopeless, the little girl gave her a sweet and said, “My name is Rou’er; what is yours? Let’s be good friends!”

She was sincerely grateful to the girl. Sweet and kind-hearted, she was just like an angel to her.

Chapter 499: Regaining Her Memories 6

She was sincerely grateful to the girl. Sweet and kind-hearted, she was just like an angel to her.

This was until that faithful day in the washroom when she happened to hear a muffling sound from the next cubicle.

Following this faint gasp and a slight sound of struggle, Rou’er’s tensed and frightened voice was heard.

“Director, can you be gentler? Rou’er is hurting! Wu... wuu... wuuu...”

“Rou’er, be good and don’t scream, all right? Others must not hear us.”

“Director, can we skip this today? Rou’er will use her mouth to do it, okay?”

“All right. Rou’er is such a good girl! Later, I’ll get you some candies... em...”

(vit(function()())

She was alarmed to hear the director’s tight and suppressed voice inside the girls’ washroom. Naïve and young, she could not understand what was going on at that time, and she just found all of it strange.

Doubtingly, she drew closer to the cubicle.

The door was locked from the inside, but from a little gap, she was surprised to see the director standing tall and erect with his back facing the door. From her angle, his pants were pooling down on his thighs, while Rou’er, looking unkempt, was kneeling on the floor and constantly bobbing her head back and forth. She was unable to see exactly what they were doing.

She pressed in for a closer look and knocked her face against the door in the process; thereby, she inadvertently alerted the two inside.

You’re reading on BoxNovel.com Thanks!

The girl shot her head up shamefully, her terrified eyes sweeping in the direction of the door.

Yun Shishi could not avoid in time, and her eyes squarely met Rou’er’s.

An inexplicable surge of panic overtook her. It might be the girl's eerie look or the distress and shame in her eyes that sent her fleeing back to her room.

That night, she was reading a comic book on her bed when the girl returned to their room.

Pushing the door open, the girl strode straight to her and yanked her off the bed by the hair.

She pressed close to her ear and, in a threatening voice which was full of rage, demanded, "Did you see it? Did you see everything?"

She was scared stiff and quickly shook her head, not understanding the cause of the latter's distress.

The girl straightened, kicked her with her foot, and whined to the rest of the kids. "She bullied me!"

"I didn't!"

Before she could clarify, the rest of the children crowded around to hit her.

None of them doubted the girl's words. That was because she was good to each of them, giving them food and bringing them out to play. No one dared to defy her order.

She was sent to the medical treatment room for her injuries that night.

She had become everyone's enemy without a clue.

The next day, the jade she had put under her pillow went missing.

She asked around, but no one had seen it. This was until she saw it around Rou'er's neck. Agitated, she confronted, "That's my jade!"

In response was Rou'er's wistful and piteous denial. "What do you mean? This is my jade. It was given to me by my mother! It's you who stole this from me. You are a thief!"

"I'm no thief!"

Before everyone's accusations and doubts, her weak argument sounded vacuous.

"That piece of jade belongs to me in the first place! It's mine; I'm no thief. I'm really not a thief!"

"Do you mean to say that I've stolen your thing?!"

Chapter 500: How long more are you going to pretend?

Rou'er's innocent smile soon aroused the children's indignation.

"Princess Rou'er will never steal your thing! You are lying. You are the real thief!"

Defenseless, she could only watch her mother's keepsake fall into the wrong hands.

Compared to the sweet-looking Rou'er, she was akin to Cinderella. No one believed her or was willing to take her side.

Since then, as if she were the devil's incarnate, the children treated her with much hatred.

Some time passed, and one afternoon, Rou'er was called to the room by a teacher, never to return.

Talks of her getting adopted by a wealthy family circulated among the children. Apparently, this affluent family even gave a handsome reward to the director, which facilitated the expansion of the welfare center.

(vit(function()){)

There was even mention of that rich family specifically coming to the welfare center to find their lost relation. They took Rou'er when they found the jade on her.

She was gone from then on.

The children were envious. Being adopted into a decent family was already a dream come true to them.

...

Yun Shishi returned to the present abruptly. Jerking her head to Mu Wanrou, her eyes rimmed with anger and gloom.

The dark memories broke through her subconsciousness and vividly appeared in her mind!

It's her...

She is that girl!

She stole my jade and then accused me of thievery!

It was her who had caused me to be bullied and be ostracized by the rest of those kids!

She loomed a step closer to Mu Wanrou. Extending her hand out, she said in a cool and firm tone, “Return my jade to me!”

With a start, Mu Wanrou stared at her in disbelief; her face rapidly drained of colors.

Did she... recognize me?

How is that possible?!

She looked so different from her younger self. How did she pinpoint her?

“You...”

“You are Rou’er, right?” With her lips pulling taut and her eyes becoming bloodshot in gloom, she opened her palm right before the woman’s face.

“I don’t know what you are talking about!”

Mu Wanrou tried to defend herself, her face looking ashen. She stumbled backward as she tried to avoid her stare.

“How long more are you going to pretend?!” Her big sullen eyes stared darkly at her. Rippling wetness could be seen at the lower rims of her lids as she shook with emotion. “Return my piece of jade to me! That’s my mother’s memento; please return it to me!”

“I don’t know what you are talking about!” Cornered, Mu Wanrou let out a howl. Her face had completely lost all its color by now.

Aaron anxiously held her shoulders. His eyes looked warily at the approaching Yun Shishi. “What are you doing? Have you gone mad?”

Yun Shishi clenched her teeth hard. Tears poured down uncontrollably from her eyes as she held her fists tightly.

Those dark memories, which had gotten dislodged from the deepest recesses of her mind, was now running amok, and she was unable to chase them away no matter how hard she tried!

Every little thing that had happened at the orphanage and all the suffering she had borne left an indelible mark in her mind just like a branding from a hot iron.

“Do you know how much hardship I have endured in the orphanage because of you?! A decade and a half; isn’t that enough?! It’s time you stop! What did I do for you to treat me in this way?!”

Chapter 501: Can you return it to me?

The hoarse accusation almost drained Yun Shishi of all her strength.

She staggered toward Mu Wanrou with her eyes fixated on her. “It’s high time you return my thing to me! Return what you stole from me! That jade, can you give it back to me, Mu Wanrou?!”

“Ahhhh! Shut up! Don’t say anymore!” Pushed to the brink, the latter covered her ears and screamed, “What nonsense are you spouting?! I didn’t steal anything from you! I didn’t! You’ve wronged me. I’m not the thief here; you are! Don’t say anymore! Shut up, or I’ll tear your lips apart!”

She yelled back in agitation. Her body swayed and her eyelids twitched violently a few times before her legs gave way, fainting in Aaron’s arms.

“Wanrou, what happened to you?!” He called out to her in panic while he supported her in his embrace.

His heart ached at the sight of her fainting. Lifting her up in his arms, he flashed Yun Shishi an angry look. “Are you satisfied now, you evil woman?! Will you give up only when she’s dead?!”

With that, he carried his woman and strode to the main gate.

(vit(function())())

Yun Shishi stood rooted to the spot. Although she mocked at herself, the cold burst in her heart did not stop.

Am I satisfied?

I’m the evil woman?

Why is that man so ridiculous?

Why is the world so ridiculous?

Is Mu Wanrou the victim here? Am I the evil one here?

Mu Wanrou was the thief! She stole the memorabilia left by her mother to her and made her suffer the despise of others. She endured so much ridicule and bullying!

Still, in the end, why am I being accused as heartless?

Isn't that ridiculous?

Is Mu Yazhe aware of this?

Does he know about this?

Mu Wanrou was adopted into the Mu family because of her jade. Did he know that she was the real owner of that piece of jade?

Is Mu Wanrou pregnant? It's so obvious that she is having a morning sickness. She should be pregnant, right?

Is it... his child?

It should be his, right? If not, whose child is that?

Mu Wanrou was his fiancée. What did he mean by those words to her, then?!

Was it a joke when he said that he would tell the whole world about their relationship?

Did he say that because he thinks I am gullible? Why did I believe him when he said he will give me the world?!

Instead, his fiancée was pregnant.

Mu Wanrou is infertile, right? What is this?!

Their loud argument had attracted the attention of the service staff. She lost her balance and fell lamely to the ground; her trembling hands then covered her wan face as her eyes looked empty and hopeless.

Qin Zhou heard the commotion as well and hurried over. When he saw her sitting motionlessly on the floor, he quickly went up to her in worry. “Shishi, what happened?”

Her eyes were still staring widely and vacuously when she asked him in a trembling voice. “Qin Zhou... I’m no thief; do you believe me?”

He was caught off guard by her sudden and mindless question. He gave an awkward laugh before asking, “Shishi, why did you ask that? How can you be a thief?”

“I’m no thief, yet... Why did they call me that?!” Covering her eyes, she broke down loudly in tears.

Chapter 502: Mu Wanrou is the real thief.

“Still, they called me a thief!”

She continued to cover her face as she bawled her eyes out.

She seemed to have returned to that time at the orphanage when she was surrounded by the other children and their cruel finger-pointing.

The memories she had suppressed for a decade and a half surged through her inner defensive walls and overwhelmed her. She could hear and see the deafening accusations, evil gossips, and hideous faces around her. Accompanied by images of the harsh beatings and serious scolding she had received, all of them played on a loop in her mind. The way they tormented her heart was akin to the grinding of a saw chain.

The reverberating white noise pushed her to the brink of sanity. She attempted to block out the suffocating noise by covering her ears and screaming, “I’m no thief! I’m really no thief! Mu Wanrou is the thief; she stole my thing! That’s my thing...”

Qin Zhou looked up to see the service crew standing beside them sheepishly; the polite smile on their faces had gradually frozen over. They looked at one another before shaking their heads at him cluelessly. This crew just came moments before him, so they were naturally clueless on what had transpired here.

By the time they made it to the scene, she was already woodenly muttering to herself in this despondent state.

(vit(function()){)

He bowed his head to look at her again. Her eyes were tightly shut as she shook all over from an undulating, insurmountable terror. Kneeling on the floor, she carefully curled herself into a ball as she rocked back and forth in great distress. Her helpless and desperate appearance triggered an inexplicable surge of pain inside his heart.

He did not know what had happened, but seeing her looking fearful and panic-stricken, he unreservedly grabbed her shoulders and consolingly pulled her into his arms.

He stroked her head lightly with his palm as he gently reassured,
“Shishi, I believe you. Don’t be scared; I’m here!”

She clenched her lips very tightly as the imaginary voices nearly tore her last shred of consciousness.

With her recovered memory, the accusing voices in the past had broken loose inside her head and tormented her ceaselessly. If someone, anyone, had stood by her side, believed her, and defended her, she would not have felt trapped in hell back then.

She tried her best to forget those nightmarish scenes, but with her memories mostly back now, the long-suppressed fear and suffering crushed her with their weight.

He saw her depressed look. Clenching his teeth in firm resolve, he tried to guide her away from the place. Her legs had gone soft and weak, however. In the end, he had to carry her himself.

He drove her back to his apartment instead of the office.

Once he carried her into his place, he let her lie in the bed and covered her with a comforter.

She burrowed in the quilt and defensively curled herself into a ball, looking totally helpless and insecure.

Sighing in resignation, he knew that there was nothing else he could do. He had tried in vain to coax information from her along the way, but she had remained in a defensive stance with her head buried. She did not seem to hear his questions and stayed unresponsive to him.

He had never seen someone so out of control before.

He sat on the bed's edge and suggested gently, "Shishi, why don't you take a rest first?"

Chapter 503: Is she pregnant?

"Shishi, why don't you take a rest first? If you don't want to talk, I won't ask further, but if you wish to talk, I'll be your most faithful listener."

She buried her face deep into her palms. The acrimonious and hysterical accusations receded slowly like the tide under his constant reassurances.

She slowly lifted her head and peeped at Qin Zhou from the quilt. Her vision gradually gained focus and clarity as her heart settled.

"Why don't you take a nap first?" He smiled in relief when she finally opened her eyes to look at him.

She nodded without a word.

Smoothing the comforter over her, he got up to leave the room and closed the door behind him.

Her eyes blinked and stared blankly at the ceiling until she fell into a slumber.

(vit(function())()

...

At the hospital.

Mu Wanrou lay unconscious in the bed inside the treatment room.

Aaron sat before an office table as he anxiously checked the doctor's expression in hopes of knowing what had happened to her. "How is the situation with her?"

The doctor pushed the spectacle rim sitting on his nose bridge, threw a glance at him calmly, and then continued to scribble on the clinical sheet.

He could bear it no longer and queried again, "Doctor, what is wrong with her?"

"How are you related to her?" the doctor asked, expressionless.

The man was visibly shaken before he replied with shame, "We are just friends."

"Friend? I see that you are close to her; you don't behave like friends." The doctor looked at him skeptically.

Embarrassed, he asked back, "Does it matter?"

"Of course, it does! If you are her husband or boyfriend, I can congratulate you, but since you are just her friend, I suggest that you call her family to come over to the hospital." With that, the doctor bowed his head to continue scribbling on the medical card.

Aaron did not get what he meant, but instinctively detecting a subtle message behind his words, he prompted further, “What illness is she suffering from?”

The doctor frowned. “Do you know her husband? Call him over. We need to run a few tests to check if she’s pregnant.”

Pregnant?!

His eyes widened in shock and disbelief. Aaron could not believe what he had just heard. Thinking that this was a joke and doubting the doctor’s competency, he asked him for assurance. “Excuse me, doctor, please let me clarify; are you positive that she’s pregnant?”

“We need to run more tests to confirm her pregnancy. Why?” The doctor sneered before asking a follow-up question. “Mister, do you think such an important matter should be joked about?”

“It’s not, but...” the man hesitantly shared, “she’s diagnosed as infertile before. Her family looked everywhere for medical help, but all said her infertility can’t be reversed...”

“How can that be?! That lady has no medical history. What proof did the doctors have to back up their diagnosis?” The doctor found it to be ridiculous. “Anyway, if you don’t believe me, you can have her hCG level measured. The result for that is released fast. There’s really no point in arguing with me over this.”

He frowned, unsure of what to do. While he very much wanted her to do that test, he knew she could not do so.

Chapter 504: Isn’ t She Infertile?

What if... she was indeed pregnant ?

This might be a private hospital, but since it was located within the capital, the Mu family could trace any bit of medical records saved here.

What if she was truly pregnant ?

This piece of news would be known to the Mu family within two days.

He remembered that not once did Mu Wanrou and Mu Yazhe have any form of intimate contact.

However, if news of her being pregnant got out...

She would surely retaliate to him.

(vit(function())())

Temporarily setting aside whether she could get pregnant or not, even if she were to expect a baby, the little life in her womb would not be allowed to exist.

If the tests proved that she was truly pregnant, then...

Bearing a baby out of wedlock was undoubtedly a huge scandal to the rich. Besides, the child was not Mu Yazhe's.

Thinking about it carefully, it was not impossible for her not to get pregnant.

He was somewhat unrestrained when he did it with her, generally because she was guaranteed to be infertile. He did not even think of using protection, so it was absolutely possible for her to conceive.

...

Aaron stood up and said, "I'll inform her family for them to make a decision. Let me send her home for today!"

The doctor blankly raised his eyes and left him with an 'oh' as response. He deemed this man's behavior to be too odd, yet he did not give him further thought. He simply cautioned him about certain things and then freely let him settle the medical fee.

Mu Wanrou regained consciousness as Aaron carried her into the vehicle.

He became jittery once he realized that she was awake. "You are up?"

"Where is this place?" Feeling a splitting headache, she massaged between her brows with her fingers. She looked around her and spotted the hospital signage in perplexity. "Why are we at the hospital?"

"You fainted earlier. I was worried, so I brought you to the hospital!" He stopped mid-speech and did not continue further. He was still considering if he should inform her of the news.

Currently, it was unconfirmed if she was really pregnant.

She did not know what was on his mind but did not bother inquiring after it, for she suddenly recalled what had happened before she

blanked out. Remembering Yun Shishi yelling out her accusation at her, her heart stopped beating for a moment. She bit the tip of her thumbnail uneasily; her heart and soul were flustered.

Did she notice?

Did the past come to her mind?

How much did she know?

Did she merely remember that she had stolen her jade, or did she know of what owning the jade signified?!

D*mn it!

Noting her anxiety, the doctor's words came to his mind, and he decided to come clean with her. "Wanrou?"

"What's the matter? Speak!" She treated him rudely as she was still frustrated.

Aaron faltered for a few seconds before he asked her gingerly. "Can you tell me about your infertility diagnosis?"

She was startled at his sudden mention of this. Thereafter, a dull pain grew in her chest, and she asked with annoyance, "Why are you asking about this all of a sudden?"

Infertility was, all along, something she could not reconcile with.

If she could bear a baby, perhaps she would have been married to Mu Yazhe long ago.

It was precisely because she was unable to do so that her position in the Mu family was this unstable.

Since ancient times, deep within the world of the rich, the mother had always risen in status because of her child.

If she had no children, she had no status whatsoever.

This was exactly her disadvantage; being unable to bear a child for Mu Yazhe, her position within the family was naturally unable to be stabilized.

She was indignant and heartbroken at the same time. She gritted her teeth and cried, “If it weren’t for my infertility, I would probably have been married to him long ago!”

Chapter 505: How Can I be Pregnant?

She was indignant and heartbroken at the same time. She gritted her teeth and cried, “If it weren’t for my infertility, I would probably have been married to him long ago!”

“What do you mean? Explain it to me clearly!” Aaron pressed her on in his unease.

Mu Wanrou recalled that past incident and explained, “Six years ago, we were about to be engaged, but he requested for a routine checkup first. Eventually, the doctor discovered an anomaly in my body; I am congenitally infertile and unable to bear a child. Grandpa thought of many solutions, and he even sought other doctors for

another opinion, yet all said that it's impossible for me to get pregnant in this lifetime!"

"How is that possible?!" He shockingly creased his brows.

On this side, a doctor claimed that Mu Wanrou's body had no abnormality; on another side, high-standing physicians confirmed her inability to conceive a child.

The clash in diagnosis was truly unfathomable.

An ordinary doctor could diagnose whether someone was pregnant or not.

(vit(function())())

However, the topic of infertility was something very profound.

Which side was wrong?

"How would I know?!" Her eyes welled up in tears. "Those experts were summoned by Mu Yazhe from leading medical centers across the country. They're professionals of the same level as professors! When they claimed that I am infertile, I could do nothing but accept it! What can I do, anyway? I'd like to give it a shot still, yet he gave me no chances; he didn't even touch me!"

"Has he truly not touched you before?" He asked with uncertainty.

"It's true. He seems to really hate me!" She laughed at herself.

"Once, he was too drunk and I helped him up to bed. He initially wanted, but... he pushed me away! I'm even suspecting his sexual preference! Even when I stood naked before him, he didn't give a

reaction at all! He simply doesn't want to touch me! He hates touching me!"

She plopped her chin on to her knees and muttered, "That's why I'm so jealous of Yun Shishi; that's why I hate her so much! If I could bear a child for the Mu family, would she even be fighting over him with me?!"

A trace of doubt appeared on Aaron's face.

He knitted his brows, thinking that something was not quite right about the story.

She flashed him a glare and snarled, "What's with your expression?!"

"Wanrou, what if I tell you that you might be pregnant? Would you believe me?" He hesitantly let her in on what was troubling him while he closely observed the changes in her expression.

She was in a daze for a while and suddenly, she responded with a sneer. "Are you done?"

Aaron was startled. "??"

"I can neither get pregnant nor give birth! Are you done? What do you mean by giving me this false hope?! Are you making me doubt the words of authorities?!"

"But... Earlier at the hospital..." he hedged.

"What?" She rolled her eyes indifferently.

“The doctor said that you are showing signs of pregnancy. He told me to have your hCG level measured.”

She was stunned out of her wits and stammered, “Ho-How is that possible? It’s impossible for me to get pregnant.”

“Wanrou, think about it carefully; are you sure you are infertile from birth? You can’t believe everything those experts say! No one knows your body better than you. Isn’t this so?”

He clutched her shoulders with a stern and earnest face, saying, “Consider everything again. We’ve done it so many times, and I’ve never once used protection. Earlier, the doctor said that you are displaying signs of pregnancy. Do you think that this is a mere coincidence?”

Chapter 506: Signs of Pregnancy

He clutched her shoulders with a stern and earnest face and said, “Consider everything again. We’ve done it so many times, and I’ve never once used protection. Earlier, the doctor said that you are displaying signs of pregnancy. Do you think that this is a mere coincidence? Have you been suffering from morning sickness these past two days? Previously, I noticed you gagging; is that a symptom of morning sickness?”

Every word of his could be supported with definite evidence. What he said did make some sense.

Mu Wanrou instantly fell silent!

She had certainly done it so many times with him. Since she was aware of her congenital infertility, and the improbability of her conceiving a child, she never minded him not using protection and never required him to do so. The same could be said for Aaron.

However, as she went over the details, she indeed detected something wrong with her body in these past few days.

Every morning before she had breakfast, she somehow felt the urge to puke. This was not too severe at first, and she could just tolerate it until it passed. She never thought of this seriously as well.

Her condition had recently worsened, however. Not only did she experience fainting spells and fatigue beyond comprehension, she had no appetite as well. Still, she simply chalked it up to her not having a good rest due to her recurring nightmares.

(vit(function())())

Because of that previous incident, she was feeling ill at ease lately and even overlooked something; her period was undeniably delayed. It had not come after a long time.

Her physical condition was well, and her period often came on time, with only a difference of two or three days at maximum. Currently, it was delayed by a week, and this was abnormal to her!

This did not cross her mind in the first place. She thought that it was a result of her having insomnia.

Thinking carefully about it now, she was inadvertently shocked.

Her face instantly sank, and she lowered her head in disbelief. She hovered her hands to where her lower abdomen was and lightly placed them over it. Her eyes were filled with skepticism.

She was... pregnant?

At the probability of this, mixed feelings crept into her heart. She did not know whether she should be elated or depressed!

What was the meaning of this?!

Was this a joke?

Was she not naturally infertile? Those experts attested that she was unable to become pregnant or give birth in this lifetime. Why was her body showing symptoms of morning sickness now, then?

Although she was inexperienced with pregnancy, at Aaron's reminder, she indeed noted her body displaying a series of abnormalities, which were similar to signs of pregnancy!

Was she truly pregnant?

Putting it another way, if she was not infertile, she had hopes of being pregnant and giving birth to a child for the Mu family!

At the thought of possibly conceiving a child with Mu Yazhe, a child belonging to them, their biological child, immeasurable joy sprang from her heart!

Her trembling hands covered her face. She had a lump in her throat and tears of excitement in her eyes!

She opened her eyes wide in surprise. She suddenly got to her feet, grabbed Aaron's collar, and exclaimed enthusiastically, "You said that I may be pregnant? So there's a chance for me to get pregnant, right?!"

Aaron locked his eyes onto her face, which was unusually contorted with ecstasy, and instantly felt great dismay emerge from his heart. He was delighted and saddened.

On one hand, he loved it; he loved that she could possibly realize her dream of becoming a mother. Now, knowing that the baby in her tummy was his, he could seemingly feel the responsibility of becoming a father!

On the other hand, he grieved; he was saddened that her joy, anger, sorrow, and happiness – every emotion that this woman felt – ultimately had nothing to do with him.

Chapter 506: Signs of Pregnancy

He clutched her shoulders with a stern and earnest face and said, "Consider everything again. We've done it so many times, and I've never once used protection. Earlier, the doctor said that you are displaying signs of pregnancy. Do you think that this is a mere coincidence? Have you been suffering from morning sickness these past two days? Previously, I noticed you gagging; is that a symptom of morning sickness?"

Every word of his could be supported with definite evidence. What he said did make some sense.

Mu Wanrou instantly fell silent!

She had certainly done it so many times with him. Since she was aware of her congenital infertility, and the improbability of her conceiving a child, she never minded him not using protection and never required him to do so. The same could be said for Aaron.

However, as she went over the details, she indeed detected something wrong with her body in these past few days.

Every morning before she had breakfast, she somehow felt the urge to puke. This was not too severe at first, and she could just tolerate it until it passed. She never thought of this seriously as well.

Her condition had recently worsened, however. Not only did she experience fainting spells and fatigue beyond comprehension, she had no appetite as well. Still, she simply chalked it up to her not having a good rest due to her recurring nightmares.

(vit(function())())

Because of that previous incident, she was feeling ill at ease lately and even overlooked something; her period was undeniably delayed. It had not come after a long time.

Her physical condition was well, and her period often came on time, with only a difference of two or three days at maximum. Currently, it was delayed by a week, and this was abnormal to her!

This did not cross her mind in the first place. She thought that it was a result of her having insomnia.

Thinking carefully about it now, she was inadvertently shocked.

Her face instantly sank, and she lowered her head in disbelief. She hovered her hands to where her lower abdomen was and lightly placed them over it. Her eyes were filled with skepticism.

She was... pregnant?

At the probability of this, mixed feelings crept into her heart. She did not know whether she should be elated or depressed!

What was the meaning of this?!

Was this a joke?

Was she not naturally infertile? Those experts attested that she was unable to become pregnant or give birth in this lifetime. Why was her body showing symptoms of morning sickness now, then?

Although she was inexperienced with pregnancy, at Aaron's reminder, she indeed noted her body displaying a series of abnormalities, which were similar to signs of pregnancy!

Was she truly pregnant?

Putting it another way, if she was not infertile, she had hopes of being pregnant and giving birth to a child for the Mu family!

At the thought of possibly conceiving a child with Mu Yazhe, a child belonging to them, their biological child, immeasurable joy sprang from her heart!

Her trembling hands covered her face. She had a lump in her throat and tears of excitement in her eyes!

She opened her eyes wide in surprise. She suddenly got to her feet, grabbed Aaron's collar, and exclaimed enthusiastically, "You said that I may be pregnant? So there's a chance for me to get pregnant, right?!"

Aaron locked his eyes onto her face, which was unusually contorted with ecstasy, and instantly felt great dismay emerge from his heart. He was delighted and saddened.

On one hand, he loved it; he loved that she could possibly realize her dream of becoming a mother. Now, knowing that the baby in her tummy was his, he could seemingly feel the responsibility of becoming a father!

On the other hand, he grieved; he was saddened that her joy, anger, sorrow, and happiness – every emotion that this woman felt – ultimately had nothing to do with him.

Chapter 507: This Child Is A Bastard

What was he to her?

Was his love for her all along unreciprocated?

Perhaps this woman whom he cared for deeply was simply taking advantage of his feelings from the start?

When she saw his dumbfounded look, the smile on her face imperceptibly stiffened. She then asked, “Aaron, aren’t you happy for me?”

“Hm?” He stared straight at her but did not respond.

She supported her abdomen with her hands as the corner of her lips flew up to form a bright smile. Positively beaming with joy, she exclaimed, “I’m able to get pregnant! I’m not infertile! I can bear a child for Mu Yazhe, and the child may become the future successor of the Mus! Isn’t that something to be happy about?”

“Wanrou...”

(vit(function())()

His eyes slowly hung low and became a little obscured. He grabbed her shoulders firmly just as a bitter arch came to his lips. “I’m truly happy that you can get pregnant!”

“Mm!” Her lips flipped into a grin and her delicate orbs seemed to glisten with tears.

However, his next words distracted her on the spot and made her seem as if she had been struck by lightning. “Still, haven’t you considered whose child is that in your tummy right now? Wanrou, it’s our child – not yours and Mu Yazhe’s! Will you give birth to it?”

Her entire body instantly turned into stone, and she was quickly caught in a daze!

Watching her expression harden, his heart ached and his orbs turned cloudy. He gently squatted beside her and pulled her into his arms

gingerly. “Wanrou, if you truly are pregnant, then this child is ours. I’m willing to acknowledge it and be accountable to you! I sincerely wish for you to not abort it! What about you? Are you willing to give birth to it?”

Something changed in her eyes, and she subconsciously clenched her fists tightly. Thereafter, she revealed an apathetic gaze!

He wanted her to keep this child?!

How could she possibly do that?!

Indeed, how could she have forgotten?! She was pregnant, but whose child was it? The child was not Mu Yazhe’s – it was Aaron’s!

This life took form from infidelity. A b*stard. How could she give birth to it?

If the Mus learned of her conceiving a child that was not Mu Yazhe’s, knowing the latter, he would surely and personally expel her out of the family! Would it matter if she had Grandpa Mu’s love then?

In the world of the rich, it was a taboo for a woman to be unfaithful to her partner.

This was undoubtedly a huge scandal!

The Mus would definitely not let her off if they gained knowledge of this matter!

At this point, her initial joy had ebbed away, her complexion had turned wan, and cold sweat bubbled frighteningly on her forehead.

“This child can’t be kept...”

“WHY?!” Aaron’s eyes nearly popped out in disbelief. He firmly grasped her body and forced her to face him. He questioned her in his distress. “This child is of your flesh and blood. It is your first child. Are you that cruel to abort it?!”

“What can I do?! WHAT?!” She grappled his front shirt tightly and retorted with an ashen face, “Do I keep this b*stard, then?! Aaron, we are having an affair! This child is the result of our infidelity! Don’t forget; I’m Mu Yazhe’s fiancée, the Mu’s young mistress to-be. I’m about to become Young Madam Mu. How can I keep the child I had with you? Are you dreaming?!”

He was seriously stumped for a moment, and his expression turned sour. Her cruel words agitated him greatly!

Chapter 508: Can Mu Yazhe Give You Happiness?

“What do you mean by an affair and by a b*stard? That is your child! How are you so cruel as to label it as a b*stard?!” He seized her shoulders firmly and stared at her with bloodshot eyes.

She stood rooted to the spot for a while, but all of a sudden, she countered with a smirk, “Aaron, don’t tell me that you have really fallen for me?”

He fell into a stupor and glanced at her with slight bewilderment.

Mu Wanrou continued, “Don’t tell me that your feelings for me are for real? Aaron, we’re just playing around. It’s better if you avoid being deeply invested into this! My relationship with you is purely for my physical needs...”

Even as a woman, she still had the occasional need for physical intimacy, and this was even more so in the absence of Mu Yazhe’s fulfilment of this. She harbored no other intentions toward Aaron!

They were a pair of man and woman that was simply satisfying their needs through gratification. Love? Who was willing to be in love with him?!

“ENOUGH!” Aaron cut her off. He had lost his patience with her by now. “Mu Wanrou, how can you be so cruel?!”

(vit(function())()

“?”

“Yes, I have developed feelings for you! Mu Wanrou, I’m in love with you!” He looked up and gazed at her with adoration before he confessed with conviction, “I can’t get you out of my heart since our university days! I came to work at Disheng because of you! Are you truly unaware of my feelings for you?! You should know that best! You have even taken advantage of my feelings for you, but what about it? I love you, and I’m willing and will not hesitate to lay my life down for you!”

Momentarily, she was startled hard.

He... had actually known that she was making use of him?

Was he an idiot?

“Now, you know of my heart.” Aaron displayed a rueful smile.

“Wanrou, I love you. I was initially over the moon when I learned that you are possibly pregnant with our child — I was insanely overjoyed! If you are willing to, willing to keep our child, I can take you away! I will protect you regardless of where we are in this world. I won’t let you suffer for one bit and will try my best to provide you with a life of happiness. Are you willing to take off with me?”

Briefly astounded, she eventually shook her head in disapproval.

“Are you kidding me?”

His expression instantly sank, as if he had fallen into an ice cellar.

You’re reading on BoxNovel.com Thanks!

“How is it possible for me to keep this child? Give up. I won’t leave with you!” She shoved him away and held her head aloft in arrogance. Letting out a dry laugh, she said, “I want to abort this child! From today onward, let’s break off our relationship cleanly! Let’s cut off all our ties. In the future, I will be the young madam of the Mu family and you will remain as my fiancé’s accompanying assistant. Let’s not interact with each other anymore!”

“What? You’re casting me aside now that you are aware of your ability to conceive?” He chuckled bitterly. Finally seeing through her heartlessness, a bone-crushing chill welled up in his chest.

“What do you mean by that?!” She sent him a piercing glare in her fury.

“Shouldn’t I be the one asking you that?” He was heartbroken and disappointed. “What is so good about being the young mistress of the Mu family? Can Mu Yazhe grant you happiness? Can he guarantee loyalty to only you in this lifetime?! Stop dreaming!”

“How do you know that he won’t be able to give me happiness?! He will surely be a good husband! He is different from you; he is a responsible man and the person that I, Mu Wanrou, have her eyes on!” She declared vehemently and added, “I just have to let him know of my fertility, of my ability to conceive a baby for him, and he won’t be so distant to me then!”

“You’re truly dreaming!”

Chapter 509: Face The Reality, Mu Wanrou

“You’re truly dreaming!” Aaron snapped at her mercilessly. “He only has Yun Shishi in his heart. He doesn’t touch you because he already has another – that is why he is not interested in you at all!”

“Shut up!” She cut him off furiously. “He is only toying with her; do I not know men? He is only temporarily interested in her. After their honeymoon phase, when the novelty wears off, and his mistaken feelings for her fade away, he will certainly cast her aside! Do you think that a nobody like her can replace me?”

He gave a disheartened laugh and warned, “Have you forgotten? Need I remind you about who is the real Young Madam Mu? What you have in your hands today was all taken away from Yun Shishi—”

“SHUT UP!” Her voice cracked at her screech. She raised her hand and swung it at him.

A loud smack was heard as a vicious slap landed on his face.

Aaron did not stop there, however. “If you didn’t steal her jade back then, you wouldn’t be brought into the Mu family by mistake, and the person beside Mu Yazhe now would be her instead, and not you! Mu Wanrou, why can’t you accept the reality even now? He’s never been yours from the start. If he isn’t meant for you, it’s no use for you to insist that he is!”

“Shut up! Shut UP! SHUT UP!”

(vit(function())())

She blocked off her ears hysterically. Realizing that he had no intention of stopping his ridicule, her hand flew up to slap him anew, but he managed to stop her with a firm grip.

“Wanrou, let’s say that you want to abort the child. Tell me, how are you going to accomplish that? How do you intend to cover up the secret abortion of the child?”

He revealed his pearly white teeth through a humorless smile.

“Don’t forget; as vast as the capital is, all the medical centers here have someone acting as an informer to the Mu family! Surely, you are clear on how influential the Mu family is, right? Are you planning to have it secretly aborted at a small clinic, then?”

She remained confounded for a while upon listening to his words.

How could she be unaware of the Mus' influence ?

All medical centers within the capital had all sorts of connections with the Mu family.

However, it would be too risky for her to leave the capital.

Only a visit to a small clinic could cover up the tracks of her abortion now.

Thinking up to this, she uttered, "As long as I can abort the baby, will it matter if the clinic is small or big?"

"Are you this willing to degrade yourself?!" He had completely lost his temper. "This is our child. It has a life!"

"Fine! I'll keep it, then!" She paused, but before a relieved smile could fully form on his face, she continued emotionlessly, "I'll keep it as a child of the Mu family!"

"What did you say?!" He hurled this question at her in shock and rage.

"If this child can't be aborted at all, then I'll stay to inform Mu Yazhe that it belongs to him!"

"You're too naïve! Do you think that he is a fool? Do you think that you can hide the child's identity from him forever?!"

He could not help but mock her innocence and naivety.

"This has got nothing to do with you!" She responded to him indifferently. "Anyway, it's not possible for me to take off with you!"

Do you think I'll be entirely safe once I elope with you?! Do you think that the Mu family will let us off? Who exactly is the naïve one here?!"

He was about to voice his opinion further, but she interrupted him solemnly. "Stop. I don't want to listen to your nonsense anymore! You'd better shut up about this before I make up my mind! I don't want anyone else to know of my pregnancy!"

Chapter 510: Purging Sins (1)

"Stop. I don't want to listen to your nonsense anymore! You'd better shut up about this before I make up my mind! I don't want anyone else to know of my pregnancy! We are on the same boat right now, so you'd better not try to do anything funny."

He smiled bitterly at her but said nothing more as he got into the car expressionlessly.

Throughout the ride, she only maintained her gaze on her flat tummy. Ambivalence fled across her eyes.

...

A Bentley rode into the car park compound of Lezhi Holdings.

Li Hanlin got off it, walked to the rear, and opened the door.

As Yun Tianyou alighted, his agent bent down to pick him up in his arms.

(vit(function())())

The boy looked up at the tall building, which was marked as Lezhi's, and asked in a low tone, "Have you finished doing your investigation about that woman?"

"Yes. Thoroughly."

"Let's go in!"

The man nodded and carried him into the building.

Inside, every employee along the way glanced at them in surprise. When the secretary saw Li Hanlin enter with a smart-looking boy in his arms, she asked in pleasant shock, "You're back, Agent Li! That child in your arms is really adorable! How is he related to you?"

Yun Tianyou furrowed his brows unhappily and made a casual remark. "Do you have time for chit-chat during the office hours?"

The agent immediately chided, "Don't talk so much; go back to your work!"

Taken aback, the secretary hastily retreated to her desk.

Inwardly, she was thinking that the child was too mature for his age! The boy looked innocent and adorable, but why was his presence so overpowering when he spoke?!

The man carried the little lad into his office and settled him in a swivel chair. The boy gracefully leaned his body against the backrest and leisurely examined the office interior.

This was actually his first time being at Lezhi's headquarters after his successful acquisition of that 60-percent shares.

The agent made him a cup of Ceylon black tea and then passed a thick stack of information sheets to him.

“Is everything in here?”

“Eh! Everything is in there.”

The boy drank a mouthful of the tea and carefully went through the files. Gradually, his brows deepened into a frown.

The data indicated that Mu Wanrou's biological mother was a lowly masseur at a parlor. She abandoned her daughter at the entrance of a hospital shortly after giving birth to her.

The baby girl was picked up by a kind couple soon after. Unfortunately, she had lost her adoptive parents to an accident and was subsequently sent to a welfare center. When she was nine, she was adopted and taken away by the Mu family.

Information about the private orphanage was also available in the sheets in greatly disturbing details.

He flipped through a few more pages, and that was when his eyes caught sight of a startling fact, which set off alarm bells in his head.

Li Hanlin spied the change in his expression and looked over at what he was reading. The information shared that the welfare center director was jailed for acts of pedophilia three years ago. The list of victims included over a dozen of orphans, even young boys, from the orphanage.

The director was a 50-year-old man called Luo Hanjin. This was once big news, so nearly everyone knew of it.

Most of his victims were young and naïve children, with the youngest only being six years old.

He got exposed to the public by the media when a long-suffering girl was abandoned by the welfare center at a hospital after contracting venereal diseases. Her genitals were close to festering abscess at the time of diagnosis. The hospital made a police report, thereafter.

Chapter 511: Purging Sins (2)

The police took the report seriously and, after getting the girl's testimony, quickly started their investigation.

After a thorough investigation, they arrested Luo Hanjin officially.

He pleaded not guilty to the pedophilia charges, but a few woman-children protective institutions joined hands to bring the truth to light.

All the children at the welfare center went through medical examinations, and a dozen of them were found to be suffering from varying degree of bruises on their bodies. In fact, a few had also contracted sexual ailments.

With clear and substantiated evidences, Luo Hanjin was prosecuted, though he still denied the charges. He wanted to settle the matter by

pulling strings, but his heinous acts caused a massive public outrage that could not be pacified. Due to the severity of his crime, which involved children, the court sentenced him to life imprisonment.

“What a beast.” Li Hanlin shook his head.

Yun Tianyou furrowed his brows slightly. “I recall mommy being adopted by Yun Yecheng from this welfare center...”

(vit(function()){)

The agent’s face turned serious at that remark. “Director Yun are you worried...”

The boy’s knuckles turned white as he clenched his fists tightly. With his face looking ugly, he stated, “I want to see him!”

The agent said, “This Luo Hanjin should be serving his sentence in prison now, but if you want to see him, I can make it possible for you!”

“Do so pronto.”

“Eh!”

The agent took out his hand phone at once and stepped to one side.

The boy continued to read through the information with a heavy heart. At the end of one of the data sheets was a list of all the orphans, with their names and photos, housed in that welfare center at that time.

His sight fell on one of the pictures at a quick glance.

In the photo, a sweet-looking girl looked unemotionally at the camera lens. Her eyes looked dead and desolate, just like an empty pool of water.

Her raven black hair complemented her scrawny face. She looked malnourished with a wan face. She was even poorly dressed.

Is this... mommy when she was young?

Why was she so skinny?!

He frowned heartbreakingly as his slender fingers traced the girl in the photo while his heart pined in pain.

“Mommy...”

Li Hanlin hung up the phone and walked over to the boy, only to find him staring numbly at a photo. He saw a nine-year-old girl in the image and suddenly recalled an important matter.

“I went to the welfare center today and heard a tidbit.”

“Speak.”

“A worker there mentioned that there used to be a girl 15 years ago who suffered from depression due to being accused of stealing and being abused by the teachers and her peers.”

“Depression?”

“Eh. Because of the state of her mind, she tried taking her life by going on a hunger strike. She was later sent to the hospital and was treated there for half a year. Eventually, the family that adopted her

donated a large sum to the orphanage. She's the girl I'm talking about."

"..." Yun Tianyou's pupils contracted as he slowly raised his head. "Depression?! Suicide?! That serious!"

"Eh. It can be serious. Anorexia will develop for severe cases." The agent looked down at the photo again and found the image oddly familiar.

He glanced up at the little boy whose eyes could not stop flashing a cold and bitter look. That was when he let out a reaction from his shocking realization. "Director Yun, is this girl in the photo your..."

Chapter 512: You are my family.

"Thief! Thief! A shameless thief!"

"It's you! It's all your fault Rou'er is gone! You are such a despicable thief..."

"I'm no thief; I'm really no thief..."

...

Yun Shishi clung onto the comforter in her dreams, beads of perspiration littering her forehead.

The room was lighted up suddenly.

Qin Zhou pushed open the door and walked in. He did knock on it a few times but received no response. Worried for her, he took the prerogative to enter and checked on her.

(vit(function()){)

The sky outside the window had long turned dark.

The evening breeze blew past the window and sent the curtains flapping.

He quickly walked over to close the window.

His careful action, nevertheless, roused the lady in the bed who had been trapped in her dream until then.

She opened her eyes hazily, first, to the ceiling, and, second, to the smiling, handsome face of his.

“Darling, are you awake?”

Her head was throbbing dully. She had unknowingly dozed off, but her sleep was incessantly beleaguered by nightmares. He promptly took a cushion pad to prop her back on the bed as she slowly sat up.

As his fingertip lightly brushed across her arm, he felt her skin to be burning to the touch. Alarmed, he reached his hand to her forehead.

“Oh, no. You are having a fever!”

“Eh?” She tried to keep her misty eyes open. At the moment, she was not yet fully awake, so her reaction was quite retarded.

With a sigh, he rummaged through his cabinet for the first-aid kit and then sat at the bedside with a thermometer.

She let him place the thermometer in her mouth obediently. A minute passed, and he took it out to look at the reading. She was really having a fever at 38 degrees Celsius!

“I think you caught a cold while you were sleeping with the window open. The wind tends to get chilly at night in my condo. It’s my fault!” Looking vexed and apologetic, he poured warm water into a glass and supervised her to take a flu pill.

“Thank you.”

“You don’t have to be so formal with me,” he jestingly said.

“Shishi, count yourself lucky to have such a caring agent like me.”

She was teased by his narcissistic tone. “Yes, yes. I’m lucky indeed to have such a good agent like you. I must thank my lucky stars!”

“That, you should do.” Made smug by her praise, he bantered with her for a bit before he smilingly asked out of the blue, “Are you feeling better now?”

She slowly nodded.

“You want to share what happened this afternoon?” He dropped his usually frivolous attitude to take on a solemn disposition.

She was silent for a while as her gaze, like her thoughts, drifted elsewhere.

He was patient, though, and did not disturb her pondering. After a long wait, she opened her mouth hesitantly. “It was all in the past; I’m not sure if I should tell you.”

She had willingly chosen to forget and bury those memories, only to have them wreaked havoc in her mind anew after her argument with Mu Wanrou, which had set them free.

“Of course, I won’t force you if you don’t want to share. However, when you finally want to talk about it, just remember that I am a willing listener. Although I’m just an agent to you in name, I already take you as my family. We are in the same boat, through joy and happiness, trials and tribulations, from here on, so don’t treat me as an outsider.” He sounded serious and sincere.

Nodding, she shared her entanglement with Mu Wanrou from beginning to end, and he listened patiently and attentively all throughout.

Chapter 513: Her Origin That Is Shrouded in Mystery

“Does this mean that Mu Wanrou is the girl who stole your jade 15 years ago?” Qin Zhou voiced out his suspicion.

Yun Shishi nodded as her orbs dulled.

“I heard of Mu Wanrou being reclaimed by the Mu family 15 years ago. Rumors have it that Old Mu once had an adopted daughter he doted on dearly; she’s called Mu Qingcheng. Although she’s not of the Mu bloodline, Old Mu treated her like his own child and

treasured her a lot. However, over two decades ago, she conceived a child out of wedlock; Old Mu ordered her to abort the baby to cover up this scandal. Later... Mu Qingcheng disappeared. Old Mu scoured the entire capital to find his beloved daughter, almost turning the entire place upside down, but it was all to no avail. Nonetheless, as long as there were traces of her location, he would search that area for her fervently! Eventually, I heard that..."

His voice suddenly dropped an octave. "Mu Qingcheng was found... but she was already dead."

Her heart skipped a beat. "Dead?"

"Mm. Dead via a car accident. It was so horrendous." He helplessly shook his head. "Old Mu was devastated by this. From then on, he started searching for the two children Mu Qingcheng had given birth to."

"Mu Qingcheng..." Yun Shishi repeated her name mindlessly. "I only know that my mom's name is Qin Cheng."

(vit(function()){)

"Did your mom not talk to you about your birth?" He popped his doubt.

"No!"

She wiggled her head in defeat. "My mom kept mum about my birth. She only told me that a certain Mu Sheng of the Mu family in the capital is the most ruthless murderer in the world. She reminded me repeatedly never to step foot into the Mu family no matter what."

“Mu Sheng?!”

He sprang to his feet in agitation and spoke in a serious tone.

“There’s only one Mu family in the capital that has a person called Mu Sheng. That man happens to be the head of this powerful family. Is your mother possibly Mu Qingcheng?!”

“...” She suddenly fell silent.

He resumed speaking after a brief pause. “Perhaps, Mu Wanrou stole your mother’s keepsake, and when Old Mu happened to find her, he brought her to the Mu household as a family member upon recognizing the jade, thinking that she’s the child of Mu Qingcheng.”

“It probably happened... like that!”

“Doesn’t that mean that you are the actual Young Madam Mu? Mu Yazhe’s actual fiancée?” He raised a handsome brow, thinking that life was really full of surprises.

The current Young Madam Mu was a fake all along!

The actual princess was accidentally left roaming the mortal realm instead.

... This was so dramatic it could be turned into a soap opera.

“I won’t return to the Mu family. I just want her to return the jade to me, the rightful owner of it!” She tilted her face upward and said, “That’s the last memory my mom left behind. Because of that woman’s selfishness, I was treated badly at the welfare center...”

“I think I have a bit of recollection of that place.” He carefully tracked his thoughts and abruptly palmed his forehead. “The director of that welfare center back then is called Luo Hanjin, right?”

Upon hearing that name, her face froze for a moment and then she instantly paled, just like a white sheet of paper.

She never knew the name of that director, but to her, that man was absolutely a monster – a frightening demon who should be banished into deepest corner of hell!

He did not notice the changes in her expression and simply continued his speech. “This Luo Hanjin... Wasn’t he found guilty of committing depraved acts on children a few years ago? This piece of news got entirely blown up, and many children at the welfare center were discovered to have received varying degrees of sexual assaults – simply outrageous.”

Chapter 514: Darkness in the Mortal Realm

He did not notice the changes in her expression and simply continued his speech. “This Luo Hanjin... Wasn’t he found guilty of committing depraved acts on children a few years ago? This piece of news got entirely blown up, and many children at the welfare center were discovered to have received varying degrees of sexual assaults – simply outrageous. That welfare center was registered under an individual. While the place operated under the pretext of a ‘welfare center’ back then, unbeknown to the public, the people working there were selling innocent and young children to rich people as playthings. In other words, they were rearing thin horses.”

“What do you mean?”

Regaining her senses, she failed to grasp the meaning of his words.

‘Rearing thin horses’? What does that mean?

The man had a look of surprise on his face. “Don’t you know the meaning of ‘rearing thin horses’?”

“I’m not sure. Something to do with thin horses, perhaps?”

“It has nothing to do with horses at all! You’re not unsure of its definition – you’re simply clueless about it. Ha ha. What an innocent child!” A corner of his lips rose, which quickly blossomed into a grin. “The thin horses of Yangzhou – have you heard of them?”

(vit(function())()

She turned her head left and right cluelessly.

He, thus, explained it to her. “Currently, in the entertainment industry, there are many popular groups. Don’t be deceived by their dazzling appearances, for they actually have investors backing them. For example, the in-demand members of the group SWEETGIRLS are, in fact, a bunch of ‘thin horses’ that the record company is grooming. Many rich men like to play with girls that are ‘growing up’– it’s a current trend in the high society.”

“What exactly does ‘rearing thin horses’ mean, then?” She was befuddled by his explanation.

“This has to be explained from the start. In the past, within the water towns of Jiangnan, there were many young girls who have received

special training to serve rich men as their mistresses. These girls have pretty features and thin physiques – hence the name ‘thin horses’. During the Ming and Qing dynasties, ‘rearing thin horses’ became such a profitable investment a majority of people engaged in the activity.”

He paused to look at her before he went on with his explanation. “Similar to choosing products, those people in that business carefully selected poor and young girls from all over the country. Those with better physical appearances were trained to have many talents. They were adept at the Four Books and Five Classics, lute-playing, chess, calligraphy, and painting. Eventually, they were sold off to the rich as mistresses for a high price. However, not all ‘thin horses’ were that lucky. Those who did not get selected were sent to brothels. Those songstresses found along the Qinhuai River were originally ‘thin horses’.”

She took this story with a pinch of salt as she could hardly believe that such a thing had happened in the past.

Noting her skepticism, he said with a chortle, “That private welfare center used its name to take in orphans and secretly picked out those good-looking ones. Some were sent to the rich with their prices clearly marked.”

She squeezed her brows. This world apparently had many dark secrets she was unaware of.

She was truly horrified.

During her dark childhood at the welfare center, she had her share of seeing Luo Hanjin’s filth and shamelessness.

Fortunately, Yun Yecheng appeared and took her away from that hellish place of misery. She was thus eternally grateful to him!

If it had not been for his timely arrival in her life, she would probably have turned out differently.

In the time she was in a trance, Qin Zhou had brought over his home-cooked porridge. He set up the table attached to her bed and presented the porridge and side dishes to her. He said smilingly, “You must be hungry. Ha ha! Come and have a taste of this specially prepared plain porridge by Sir Qin Zhou for you. I’ll let you be the judge of my cooking skills!”

She shockingly asked, “You made this for me?”

“Who else, then? I realized that you haven’t had your lunch. Since you slept through the entire afternoon, you must be famished now!”

“Thank you!” She pressed her lips together, thankful for his thoughtfulness.

Chapter 515: Interrogation

“Yes. You ought to thank me!” He told her this with his arms crossed. “You see; I’m not just your manager but your nanny as well! I haven’t been this kind to anyone else before!”

He sat on the bed’s edge and said seriously, “Shishi, don’t dwell on the past. Some things are best to leave behind. It’s time for you to let go of the pain. I believe in cause and effect. We reap what we sow.

Sow what is good, and you reap just reward; sow bad seeds, and you reap retribution. That Mu Wanrou is misguided and despicable; she'll suffer for it sooner or later!”

She found his words to be profound. “Qin Zhou, are you a Buddhist?”

“I don't believe in Buddhism but in retribution, instead.” He propped his chin in his palm ponderously and continued, “You reap what you sow; those who do evil will have their retribution someday!”

...

The chain dragged noisily on the floor of a gloomy corridor of a prison.

A middle-age man with a crown of white hair stumbled forward when a prison guard kicked his leg mercilessly.

(vit(function()())

“Hurry up!”

The prison door slowly opened.

In a chair inside the interrogation room sat Yun Tianyou with his agent standing beside him.

As the man was hurled into the interrogation room by a prison guard, he quickly spotted the smart-looking lad with an adorable face and graceful disposition. Right now, however, his innocent face was holding a cold and stern look.

Luo Hanjin was pushed on the interrogation seat with his hands cuffed.

Li Hanlin exchanged a look with the prison guard. The latter got his meaning easily and left them to their devices respectfully.

The bewildered man could not fathom the happenings around him. He had been serving his prison sentence all along when he was summoned out here today for no apparent reason. Now, he was meeting a lad of no more than seven years old. Was this for real?

He was on his full guard as he eyed the man standing beside the little boy. “Who are you?”

The agent merely looked at him impassively. Suddenly, without warning, the little lad opened his mouth casually. “Luo Hanjin, you don’t have to mind our identity. I’m here to ask you a few questions; you’d better be honest with your answers. If you try to hide anything, I’ll make sure you suffer the consequence.”

“Who are you? For a mere kid, you sure are boastful, aren’t you?”
The man was displeased and unimpressed with the boy.

He enjoyed good times before, and although he was down and out now, it seemed that his ordeal would be over soon. Now that the hype about the incident had died down, his sentence was reduced time and again. At present, the original court sentence of life imprisonment was reduced to a 10-year jail time. He would be out of prison before long.

Hence, he was unbothered by this little boy.

The agent was really turned off by the man's willful words and harshly reprimanded, "Luo Hanjin, do you really think that everything is fine and dandy since you can get out of prison earlier than your term? Do you think I can't extend your imprisonment?"

"He he! Are you taking me for a ride? You haven't told me who you are in the first place, so do you think I'll be threatened by every Tom, Dick, and Harry?" He sniggered with a despicable look.

The boy smiled eerily, his doleful eyes shining chillingly. "Well. It looks like we have to show you what we are capable of to get your cooperation!"

"What do you mean?"

The man looked at him quizzically as Li Hanlin walked over to the entrance. With two claps of his hands, two prison guards emerged with their police batons.

One of them aimed his baton at his crown and hit hard, sending his head spinning.